

Seeking to be Loved

Darmon

Author Notes:

Please note that this is my first story ever. I've only ever got a GCSE in English. So I know I would be making literary mistakes.

This isn't going to be a quick fap fest for those that just want that, but for those that do stick with the story I'm sure they would find the sex to their liking, at least I hope so.

My aim was to create a story with intimacy and not porn with a loose story. This story has a build up to the eventual intimacy but when it does get to that point I hope that everyone enjoys.

The usual disclaimers apply here, i.e. make sure you are of legal age to view this type of content and any persons or locations are my imagination only, for your pleasure. All persons in any sexual act are over the age of 18.

I originally tried to create this story when MC was around and conscious from his POV and other times as third party or narration style. This got too much and confusing so opted for a simple third party / narration style. Having said that the first part and ending will be from the POV of MC.

While the story may start off with a big reveal it is the journey of how it got to this point that really matters, right? All I ask my readers is to be patient as that journey is important for this story.

This story is likely improbable and probably begs disbelief, but the emotions felt by the cast I tried to capture and are probably more accurate than the story.

Characters

MC:

Darmon, 18 years older

Cast in relation to MC:

Jacob, Father, 40 years older

Evelyn, Mother, 38 years older

Elizabeth, Sister, 20 years older

Sara, Sister, 18 years older

Agatha, Grandmother, 59 years older

Lynette, Aunt, 39 years older

Amber, Cousin, 19 years older

Jade, Cousin, 18 years older

Seeking to be Loved

How things got to this stage could only be called a string of events that eventually would lead to this. These events while, initially, not nice would lead to something that I or those around me could never have imagined at the time.

At this moment, I'm flat on my back with not one but three women surrounding me. The oldest of the women was impaled on my cock, riding me whilst moaning loudly and panting heavily.

The next female, who was a few years older than me was sitting on my face as I licked and slurped her pussy, she was a little more silent than the older woman, but the I could tell she was fully enjoying my tongue playing with her clit and pushed deep inside her.

The final female who was the same age as me was kissing someone, I didn't know if it was the older woman riding my cock or the one grinding her pussy on my face. If I had to guess since I couldn't see her, she was kissing the woman getting a tongue lashing from me, which would also account for why she was more silent in her pleasure.

It didn't matter to me either way, as I knew these three females were mine and mine alone. They were mine and I was theirs.

The pussy surrounding my cock was tight, It was hard to believe until I started my relationship with her she hadn't been fucked by her husband, vaginally, for the last 18 years. There was some history there, but I would be getting ahead of myself and that tale will be told in due course.

Would you believe me if I said the pussy I was eating belonged to someone that I hated for the longest time. She was a bitch to me and, initially, the bane of my life. Let's just say that it was forgiveness that helped pave the path to where we are now.

She has a sweet tasting pussy that made me harder, and the woman bouncing on my rock hard cock was taking full advantage of it.

The female the same age as me, grabbed my hand and put it between her legs. She also had a very tight pussy and was very wet.

While the foursome was something new, I had taken her virginity a few months prior. The female, who was riding my face, had broken her hymen to a handle of a brush, but mine was the first cock to enter her. As part of the forgiveness she pledged that only my cock alone will, ever, enter her.

The moans and screams of the women as they climaxed was music to my ears and I knew that soon I would be unloading into the one riding me, and eventually into all of them in turn. I would always take these women bareback and would always ensure a load we deposited deep inside them. It's not like I could get them any more pregnant than they already were.

I truly loved these women, after all why wouldn't I love my mother and sisters, and they were also pregnant with my children.

How we got here is a sad story with a happy ending, I know spoiler alert. I just hope you would indulge me and let me tell you the tale.

Being ignored hurts a lot more than being beat upon. For as long as the boy, now turned teen, could remember, he has either been beat up or ignored by everyone around him. The young man, couldn't be sure if it had always been like this, but from the time that he could retain memories he'd been ignored by his family. At least when he was beat upon then he could at least take some pleasure in knowing he wasn't being ignored. Sometimes, he would even do something that he knew would require his father to take the belt to him.

His family, and he'd loosely admit this, since he felt no love, affection or anything from them made thing difficult for him. At times he considered them not family, but if sharing the same blood constituted a family then he would have to say they were his family; even so at times he doubted that.

His name is Darmon, although he didn't know this until later when he was a young boy. Up until this point he was always called 'Bastard', 'Shithead' or some other derogatory name. Darmon had only recently turned 17 years old or at least he thought he was that age. It's hard to know exactly since he would never get the normal birthday celebrations, and he only knew this from vague overheard conversations between household servants. His father, Jacob, was 40 years old; Darmon once again only found out after hearing the family celebrating his father's birthday without him present, that day he was being ignored.

Darmon's father was a hard as nails, 6ft 1 with a stocky build and a receding hairline, dark brown in color, who was now sporting a visible pot belly. He was one of those that took no shit from anyone, demanding respect through fear and intimidation.

Darmon's mother, Evelyn, was 38 years old. Once again, he couldn't be a hundred percent sure of this except for those same vague conversations hinted at her age. She is a beautiful slim 5ft 6 woman with a somewhat sad face; Darmon at the time couldn't figure out why. She had light blonde long straight hair with breasts that fit her body shape nicely and an ass that was neither too big or too small for her frame. Her hair was always done nicely with her painted finger and toe nails in matching colors.

Darmon's oldest sister, Elizabeth, is 20 years old. This he could be a hundred percent sure of as there was always a birthday celebration for her. She was almost a mirror copy of his mother with an inch on his mother in height. Her breasts were larger than his mother's and she took great pride in that fact. She had her hair cut shoulder length and sported the same hair tone as his mother. Darmon could tell she was just as beautiful as his mother.

The middle sister, Sara, is 18 years old. This also Darmon could be a hundred percent sure of as there was a very big celebration for her that year, she had lots of her friends attend. Darmon was relegated to the basement with the door locked from the outside, but this didn't stop any of the noises filtering down to the basement. There was plenty of giggles, laughter and screams as everyone was enjoying themselves. Sara, is 5ft 4 in height and had a slim athletic figure. She wasn't as blessed in the chest area as her mother and sister were. She also had the same light blonde hair like her mother and sister, but hers were curly and went down to just below her shoulders.

Darmon, was 6' tall now and his body was slim with no hint of any muscle mass. He wouldn't say he was only skin and bones, but everyone could tell he was close to that. His hair was red and messy, and looked more like his mother and had none of his father's features, except maybe his height.

Darmon from an early age, had to fend for himself for everything he could get. He remember, being cold and hungry at 5 years old and had to look through the garbage for any food. He had to do this most nights until his sister, Sara, caught him. Being caught, startled him making him drop everything before running back to the basement scared, he knew he was going to be in big trouble, any second now his father would be down with belt in hand.

Darmon, scared and curled into a ball, that night, went to sleep hungry. Fear prevented Darmon moving from the basement for awhile, knowing if he showed his face then he was sure to get a beating. He didn't know if he got lucky, thinking he must of imagined his sister catching him or she didn't tell anyone. It wasn't until night time that his hunger got the better of him and decided to venture up in search of food. The garbage bin was empty and he was thinking this was going to be just another day, where he would have to sleep cold and hungry.

Knowing it was late and that everyone was probably asleep, he decided to look around, hoping that he would find something even if it was just enough to take the edge off his hunger. He found nothing in the kitchen, dinning room or living room. He almost gave up and went back to the basement but a light closing door noise almost made him panic and wanting to flee thinking someone was about to catch

him. Darmon waited and wasn't sure if it had only been a few seconds or minutes passed by, his legs were frozen. When nothing happened, he let out his breath that he didn't even realize he'd been holding. He was so hungry and decided to see if he could find anything at all, so ventured further into the house.

All the doors to the bedrooms were closed, as Darmon passed some large double doors he heard some loud snoring and some faint sobs. This confused him, but never would he willingly want to go through those doors. He passed another door and couldn't hear anything from it, he moved on from this one also, not having the courage to see if the door was unlocked or what was behind the door. When he got to another bedroom door he was surprised and shocked to see a plate with some food left outside the door and what looked like a soft warm blanket.

Darmon didn't know if he should be afraid or happy with this find. 'What if this was someones food and they were coming back to it shortly?! Do I eat it knowing that if that was the case then I can expect a beating tomorrow?' Darmon thought. His stomach rumbled loudly and this made him snap his head up for fear someone would hear that. He listened, but no one was suddenly opening doors with shouts and belt in hand.

Even so Darmon felt fear as he stared at the plate of food. His mouth was watering as he crept slowly towards that which would keep his hunger at bay, for that day. Darmon's hunger got the better of him and decided to eat small bits of each elements on the plate, then try to rearrange the remaining food to make it look less likely that any of the food was taken in-case this was someones food plate that they were returning to.

While the overriding hunger was consuming, Darmon tried to be alert and listen for anything that would give him away as each bite and chew took the edge off his hunger. He knew that he couldn't or shouldn't eat everything, if he wanted to make sure that no one found out that he'd eaten any of it, so had just enough before making it look like nothing was taken before going he went back to the basement. Darmon eyed the blanket, but knew that if he took that and it was found in the basement then it was a sure sign that he'd been there and some of the food on the plate had been eaten.

The same thing happened over the next week with the exception of the blanket, which somehow appeared within the basement. Darmon didn't know if someone had placed it there or someone dropped it whilst doing the laundry. It had taken him a few days to build up the courage to even make use of it.

Some of the best days were when a older lady would come to visit his family. It was then Darmon's mother would come down to the basement, order the maids to bathe him and dress him in smart clothing. Darmon would get to eat well and would enjoy some sweet treats. The older lady would pick him up, cuddle him and shower him with little kisses. Yep, those days were the best.

When the older lady wasn't around, Darmon's mother would look sadly at him and that only confused him, at the time. His oldest sister, Elizabeth, would take great pleasure in torturing her brother, hitting and calling him names. This would make his father smile and laugh and fuss over his sister giving her praise and gifts. Sara would look upset, but would make token jabs at him so that her father would also praise her. Sara always looked like she would about to cry when she did this, this also confused him since Darmon didn't understand why.

It was worse for Darmon when his mother would look at him with some affection, sometimes she would smile at him or even pick him up to cuddle her son. If his father witnessed this then he was sure to get the brunt of his father's anger and Darmon's bottom would be sore for days on end. This in turn would make Darmon avoid being near his mother for fear that he would be punished for any show of affection towards him.

Darmon's sisters always went off during the day to something called a school. He didn't know what this was and wouldn't dare to ask. He remember a day when the maids were ordered quickly to get him ready and take him to the living room as some people had come to see him.

"Look, here is the boy, as you can see he's perfectly fine," Jacob said in a jovial voice. This brought fear to Darmon, since he knew that a punishment was coming. Darmon's mother remained silent with her gaze down.

"Thank you, Mr. Preston. Can I ask why neither you or your wife has enrolled him into school?" a lean man asked with an open notepad scribbling something.

"Of course, I decided that the boy should be home schooled as this would be a more cost effective method then the expenditure of sending him to a private school as I am already paying for my daughters to attend," Jacob answered smoothly.

"I see, if it the matter of costs then why not send him to a local non-private school since it would do..." the man flicked through some notes, "... forgive me I don't appear to have his name in my records."

"Darmon," Evelyn answered in a faint voice.

"As I was saying, it would do Darmon good to mingle with boys and girls his own age," the lean man continued.

"It's not a matter of costs or for him to attend a local school, it's just that I have decided that home schooling would best meet the boys needs," Jacob responded coldly.

"Very well, if that is your choice then we will accept that, but you should note that we would periodically give Darmon assessments to see if this method is working or not. If we feel that it isn't then we have the authority to force you to have Darmon attend a local school," the man scribbled into his notepad looking directly at Jacob.

"Of course, I can assure that the boy gets the best tutors for his level of standing," Jacob responded looking at Darmon with fury.

After the man left and was clear away from the house Darmon's father turned on him, "See what the fuck you've done now, you fucking bastard!"

After that he wasn't able to sit down properly for a week. Darmon didn't even have the strength to go food hunting, but was pleasantly surprised at small packages left, hidden under the blanket, he was now using. The packages contained some food. So he didn't starve. At the time, Darmon didn't know who was doing this and truth be told he didn't care as long as he was getting something.

Darmon wasn't sure if it was due to his father being forced to comply, but the maids then started to teach Darmon to read and write.

This continued for a few more years with the beatings given by Darmon's father and the torture that his sisters, well at least one of them, would subject him to, to the glee of his father. The older lady would continue to come over once at least twice a month, where Darmon was pampered and felt loved, until this all came to a sudden stop. Darmon was probably between 8 and 9 years old at that time.

Darmon was so happy that the older lady turned up again that day, but as he was bouncing with joy, almost running to greet her, he heard an argument unfolding in the living room. Darmon's sisters were at school at the time, so it was just his father, mother and the older lady.

"... why are you still treating your son as you are, Jacob?" the older lady was asking with some anger in her voice.

"How I treat that bastard is my own business and none of your mother..." Jacob spit back, "the boy is clearly the product of this whore's infidelity."

"What do you mean, Jacob?"

"Ask her yourself, mother... the whore and slut clearly opened her legs for another. After Sara was born, I got a vasectomy and a week later I resumed our married life only to find she was pregnant, later. The whore fucked her lover during my recovery time and clearly got pregnant with the bastard," Jacob spat out.

"Evelyn, is this true? Please tell us the truth," the older lady asked.

"The child is his I didn't sleep with anyone else..." Evelyn stated.

"STOP LYING BITCH, I KNOW YOU SLEPT WITH SOMEONE ELSE... HOW ELSE DO YOU ACCOUNT FOR THE BASTARDS HAIR BEING RED, HUH? IT'S NOT BLONDE LIKE HERS OR OUR DAUGHTERS OR BROWN LIKE MINE," Jacob shouted with clear rage now.

"I told the bitch that if she shows even a little bit of affection for the boy then I would make sure I kill him. The boy is clearly not mine and I don't care what happens to the bastard. His life is in the hands of the whore that bore him. I'm only keeping her around for the girls," Jacob said next in a flat voice that made it clear this wasn't up for debate.

"Jacob, Darmon is just a child and your wife has informed us he is your. Don't treat either, the way you are. I believe Evelyn," the older lady tried to sooth and calm her son, Jacob.

"Why should I care about the bastard? He is clearly not mine and me keeping him this way ensure that this whore stays inline and stays a good mother for our daughters," Jacob said laughing.

"If the child is a burden to you, then let me take care of him. I would be willing to adopt him," the older lady said trying to find another solution.

"You will do no such thing, mother. It clearly looks like you are on the side of this slut and her spawn."

"Jacob, that is no way to talk to your mother..."

"YES, IT IS. I'VE SEEN HOW YOU DOTE ON THE BASTARD AND NOW YOU WANT TO TAKE AWAY THE ONE THING I HAVE TO KEEP THIS WHORE FROM SPREADING HER LEGS FOR ANOTHER," Jacob shouted totally losing control of his emotions.

"JACOB..." the old lady shouted.

"No get out of my house, you are no longer welcome here and stay away from me and this family. You have now forfeited your rights to see your granddaughters."

"Jacob, don't do this. This isn't the way to resolve this and I guarantee this will bite you down the lin..."

"I DON'T CARE. GET OUT AND DON'T COME BACK. TELL MY SISTER AND NIECES THEIR NOT WELCOME HERE EITHER GOING FORWARD," Jacob shouted and stood up to forcefully remove her from this house, if she didn't do it straight away.

The older lady left the living room and saw Darmon with a very happy face, not understanding what had just happened. The older lady moved towards Darmon to take him into her arms, but was stopped by another loud shout, "NOW MOTHER, THE BASTARD IS DEAD TO YOU." With sadness the older lady looked at Darmon and passed him by.

Since that day, the older lady stopped coming to the house. Darmon's life following that was in constant turmoil, if he wasn't getting beaten, he was being ignored. Darmon hated being ignored, as it hurt a lot more than the beatings. The beatings started to slow down, when Darmon started to smile and laugh as his father as he

delivered them. This all came to an abrupt end sometime after Darmon's 17th birthday. Darmon was now subjected to only being ignored, and needed to feel that he mattered. That day Darmon left the basement and went to the living room to see if they would stop ignoring him.

Jacob seeing Darmon come upstairs, order him, "Get back into your room BOY". Darmon felt that this was a result as he was seen and not ignored. Darmon instead decided to ignore his father, to stay and look around. Darmon's mother looking at her son with sadness and his eldest sister with scorn, then smirk wondering what her father was going to do to him. Sara, had a look that Darmon couldn't place or understand.

"No!" Darmon said flatly.

This of course angered Jacob and he stood up unbuckling his belt, "I SAID LEAVE NOW!"

"No," Darmon respond again looking his father directly in the face.

At least Darmon wasn't being ignored and this brought a smile to his face. He heard his mother and sisters screaming, and Darmon didn't understand why. They knew he would get a regular getting a beating from his father, but had never witnessed it first hand and never knew to the extent of the beatings. Darmon had received many beatings from his father over the years and this wasn't anything new.

Darmon didn't make any sounds and only smiled up at his father as he received the beating. This clearly angered Jacob further and he started to look around for something else to use. Jacob spotted the fire stoker and grabbed it. After the first blow, Darmon put his arms up to ward off the blows from my head and face. Darmon grunted in pain and he heard his mother screaming, he wasn't sure but he thought he heard his sisters screaming and sobbing.

Darmon couldn't recall the next events clearly, as he lay in a pool of his own blood and gasping with pain. He does vaguely know that someone was shielding him by laying over his body. Jacob was ready to strike the whore shield her bastard, and would have done so if it wasn't for another body that threw herself over her brother and mother. This must have stopped Jacob and Darmon couldn't tell you exactly who they were but was grateful that they had probably saved his life that day.

Darmon was in and out of consciousness during his recovery. A few weeks into the recovery, Jacob forbade whoever was tending to me to continue with a warning anymore and he would end the bastards life. Darmon was still unclear who it was or if it were different people that nursed me back to health. He resolved then that after he recovered he would get out of here, never to return. It took just over a month for Darmon to recover enough, and when he felt strong enough chose to escape. Maybe, Darmon reasoned he could find the older lady that always loved him, although he had no way of knowing how to go about doing that.

Darmon listened and picked a day, when he didn't hear anyone and guessed there was no one at home that day. Darmon searched for a sack and found a single duvet cover that he could use as a makeshift sack. He went upstairs to fill what he could into the sack as he thought he could sell these or batter them later, with a view to trying

live outside somehow. Once, Darmon had gathered what he could he left the house never looking back.

"Grandma, Darmon has gone and left us," Agatha heard over the telephone.

"What do you mean, sweetie? Has your father finally killed him?" Agatha couldn't stop the tears from forming in her eyes and started to sob.

"Nearly the other day, I was too afraid to tell you. Truthfully, I don't know if dad has done it or not. I suspect that neither mom or dad know yet. I went down to spy on him as I always do and couldn't find him. I also noticed some items were missing around the house, so I suspect my brother ran away."

Agatha wiped the tears forming in her eyes before responding, "My poor child, has suffered enough. Listen to me carefully, Sara. Can you do that?"

"Yes!"

"Good, do not draw attention to that fact that your brother isn't there anymore. Continue to act as if nothing is different. With luck we may have a few days to a week before your father finds out that he isn't around. Protect your mother after he finds out as his wrath is likely going to be directed towards her."

"I will grandma as best I can. Do you think I should tell mom about what we have discussed? Also what are you intending to do?"

"If you inform your mother, she may act in a certain way which could cause her further problems and as for what I intend, I will look for him and bring him home."

"NO, Don't bring him back here. Please grandma," Sara sobbed over the telephone.

"Shush, sweetie. I will bring him home to me. His home is now with me and his aunt and cousins. Remember to act normal and don't tell your sister our plan either. I don't trust her."

"I won't, although, I've heard her crying most nights since she witnessed what our father did. I think she is having a crisis of morality herself and feeling pangs of regret."

"That might be true, sweetie. For now leave things with me. I don't know how long this will take or if I can even find him, but know I will do everything I can make it so. Keep me informed with any new developments your side and I will do the same my side."

"Okay, grandma. Love You!"

"Love you too, Sara."

That first night that Darmon ran away from home was a struggle. He had no clear idea of, or even, how the outside world worked. It got dark quick and he started to look for someplace he could at least rest. Darmon still carried the makeshift sack with him which jingled and clanked every so often, due to the items inside it knocking against each other. He found a dark and somewhat dry spot. Dropping the sack next to me he settled down to rest for the night.

Sometime during the night, Darmon was awakened by the clanking of the sack. This jolted him awake with a start to see two men trying to steal his sack. He jumped to his feet and pushed one of them away. The one that held the sack dropped it before facing Darmon waiting for his friend to join him.

"Leave me alone. Get lost that is mine," Darmon growled.

"Or what? Little BOY!" the one Darmon was facing said. The reference to 'Boy' made Darmon burn with anger which prompted him to clench his fists.

"We could just as easily kill you and take it anyway. You could saves us the trouble and hand it over without you dying today," added the man Darmon had pushed

away, who got up and brushed his clothing to scrape away any debris from his clothes.

"No," Darmon said in a flat tone.

"Arrahh, that too bad. You chose wrong, boy!" the man facing Darmon growled out.

The man that had been pushed away and got up rushed Darmon, knocking him down as started to lay punches to Darmon's face. Darmon tried to protect my head with his forearms which resulted in receiving punches to his chest and stomach. The other man came alongside them and started to kick Darmon in the sides. Darmon laughed out loud and this caused both men to hesitate, this gave him the chance to throw the one that had him pinned down off him.

"Is that all you've got?" Darmon taunted them as he got up.

"What the fuck!" one of them said as both looked towards each other.

"That tickled, my shithead of a father hit me harder than that." It was true, the beatings Darmon received from his father were a lot worse and hardened him to such pain.

The fight didn't last much longer after that. Darmon was smiling and laughing as they traded kicks and punches. Eventually, Darmon managed to knock both to the ground, the fight in them had left. Darmon picked up his sack and gave each of them a swift kick to the head before leaving.

"Lynette, can you come here please, darling?" Agatha shouted.

A few minutes later a busty brunette walked into the living room. While she was slim her bust were just a little too large for her frame, "You called mom?"

"Darling, You've got to help me find Darmon."

"What do you mean find him? Doesn't my asshole of a brother have him locked up and haven't we been trying to free him... We were just waiting on his 18th birthday, right?"

"I think Jacob went too far this time, and according to Sara he's gone missing," Agatha said with a deep sigh.

"Fucking hell, it can't be. Don't tell me Jacob killed him and disposed of the body!" Lynette was close to full out burst into tears.

"Shush, darling. I don't think so, and neither does Sara as she noticed missing items from around the house. I think he ran away from home. Sara hinted at something that happened recently but was reluctant to say what," Agatha tried to calm her daughter down.

"Fuck... FUCK! We were so close, his 18th birthday is only 4 months away," Lynette was clearly upset with the timing for all this.

"I know darling, it's not Darmon's fault, he didn't know of our plans and had no way of knowing. I told Sara not to say anything."

"Aaaahhhh!!! What do you need me to do, mom?"

"Can you find someone or get someone to help track him? If we can get to him quickly we might be able to do this before the shit hits the fan," Agatha requested.

Lynette, got out her cell phone and started to make some calls. During one of her calls, her oldest daughter came into the living room. She was a splitting image of her mother, maybe an inch or two taller with a bust just slightly smaller than her mothers. Amber surveyed the room and seeing her grandmother upset, immediately raise alarm bells in her mind. Amber was just about to open her mouth to ask, but was stopped by her mother raising her hand with the index finger pointed up.

Lynette finished her call and looked at Amber, "Sweetie, your cousin is missing and Sara suspects he may have ran away from home."

"What, why?" Amber said with some confusion.

"We don't know, but from what Sara has hinted at, your uncle went too this time," Lynette replied to her daughter.

"Are you sure he ran away and that man, who I refuse to call uncle, didn't kill him?" Amber asked upset and confused. While she had never meet her cousin, she had heard enough of the pain and suffering he has had to endure from an early age. This made her sad firstly, because they weren't allowed to meet him or her female cousins, especially after the fallout from what grandma tried to do. Secondly, no one and she meant no one should have to suffer like he and her Aunt had to suffer.

"If I can help in anyway then please let me know," Amber said.

To say that the shit hit the fan would be an understatement.

It had taken Jacob 2 days to finally go seek the boy to punish him for his bad mood. Knowing 'the bastard' wouldn't dare venture out and upstairs after the last beating he was given, sort of gave Jacob a sense of achievement. Jacob knew he would have killed the boy for defying him that day if it wasn't for Sara throwing herself over the boy to shield 'the whores spawn'. Jacob had already expected the 'whore' to do it to save the 'bastard' she spawned, but never did he expect Sara to do the same. He would have enjoyed beating his cunt of a wife also for even trying to protect the boy. It was Sara, his beloved daughter, that saved the boy and her whore of a mother.

Jacob recalled fondly how he roughly fucked the whore that night, he had enjoyed fucking her ass without lube and making her deep throat his cock after it had been in her bowels. Jacob remembered his promise as he was plowing the whore, "If you thinking this is bad. What I do to your bastard would pale in comparison. I will ensure you watch as I end his life in front of your eyes. Watch as I cut him piece by piece. Before the lights leaves his eyes, I will make him and you see me cut off his pathetic cock before I shove it into his mouth and watch as he chokes to death. The bastard will never sire more of the man you spread your legs for."

Jacob also reconfirmed another promise he had made after his wife fell pregnant, "Remember, the promise I made after you spread your legs for that man, that man who took what I owned. I promised you that I would never touch your filthy pussy again."

Jacob never did touch her pussy after the birth of Darmon. He was confused at first thinking that maybe Evelyn conceived prior to the vasectomy, but the due date didn't quite match-up with dates he figured out in his head. His suspicions were confirmed after seeing the boys red hair, the whore had cheated on him during his recovery period. There was no way that the boy was his.

Jacob was removing his belt as he went down the stairs to the basement. He started to say loudly in a menacing voice, "Here bastard. I've come to pay you a visit." He opened the basement door with a bang to scare the boy and it made him happy whenever he did it and the boy would jump cowering in a corner. The boy wasn't there or at least might be hiding knowing what was coming. As Jacob searched the room he was getting agitated as he couldn't find the boy hiding anywhere. 'Has he

left and gone to the main house? I'm going to kill the bastard for not learning his lesson,' he thought.

Jacob scanned the room at the top of the stairs and couldn't see the boy anywhere. His anger and agitation got worse as he went in search for the bastard. 'You're going regret hiding from me, boy. If you think the beating I gave you last time was bad, just wait... I'll make sure you never walk again,' Jacob thought.

"BOY, DON'T MAKE ME HAVE TO FIND YOU. GET OUT NOW," Jacob shouted.

This drew the attention of Evelyn and the girls. Fear clearly showing on each of their faces and this included Elizabeth who recently was have a crisis of morality herself over the past actions she had taken. When she was younger, she had taken great joy in the suffering of her brother all to get the praise and love of her father. Since, witnessing the actual beating in real life and seeing how her father treated her brother almost to the point where he nearly killed her brother, guilt had been playing on her mind. Elizabeth had over the last few weeks been, nightly, crying herself to sleep.

Jacob searched the house and couldn't find the boy. Jacob's rage was etched on his face and he saw Evelyn and the girls sitting on the couch in the living room. Jacob rushed towards Evelyn. "WHERE IS YOUR BASTARD, WHORE?" Jacob spat out. Evelyn just looked at her feet clearly not understanding what was going on. Jacob dragged Evelyn to her feet then slapped her hard across the face with enough force to make her head snap back and blood seep from a cut lip. Evelyn cried out in pain and collapsed to the floor. Jacob was about to kick her when a shout stopped his actions.

"DAD!"

Jacob looked up and saw Sara looking at him and moving to stand between him and her mother. Elizabeth was so shaken that it had taken her many seconds to join her

sister. Jacob saw the united front and pushed table lamps and picture frames off a side table as he walked away. Jacob needed a drink and decided to go to his study.

Jacob left and Sara, waited to make sure her father wasn't returning before she turned to kneel down beside her mother. "Mom, are you okay?" Sara realized this was a stupid question considering what just happened but she had to do something. Evelyn just looked up at her daughter and nodded. Evelyn tried to smile to reassure her daughter.

"Elizabeth, help me get mom up," Sara ordered.

Both Sara and Elizabeth helped their mother up and moved towards Sara's bedroom. They gently placed their mother on the bed before Sara got up to lock her bedroom door. When she returned to the bed, everyone (mother and daughters) cried until exhaustion overcame them all and both daughters held their mother between them.

Jacob was getting drunk on single malt deep in thought.

'Did the bastard run away from home?'

'Did the whore help him escape?'

'Were my daughters involved?'

'Is it a bad thing that the "the bastard" is gone?'

Jacob's last thought brought some anger, 'Of course, it is...' he thought. Then out loud, "How else am I supposed show the whore who's the real man of this house, if I don't slit the boy's throat in front of her. Should I find him so I can get that satisfaction?"

Jacob slept alone that night and every night since then.

"Mom, Mom! I think I've found Darmon," Lynette said with some excitement to her mother, there was clearly joy in her voice. It has nearly been 6 months since that day, the day her nephew ran away. She and her mother, had filed a missing person report and hired a PI. She spared no expense to find her nephew. Lynette's daughter, Amber and Jade, did their own part scanning faces and looking briefly into alleys with the hopes that could get lucky.

"Oh my darling, are you sure. Where?" Agatha asked, not letting any excitement enter her voice. She just didn't want to be disappointed again. Every time, they thought they had a lead it would lead to nothing, 6 months was leaving a toll on her.

"If it is him then he is about 70 miles from the city and living rough at some disused and abandoned train station ruins. I have someone watching him. I got them to send me a picture," Lynette was a little excited to show her mother the picture.

Lynette showed a picture to her mother, who broke down and started to cry, "Can your people bring him here?"

"Probably, but if he runs then I doubt we will ever find him again. We should go get him, mom? If the man who is watching him tries to grab him, Darmon might think he was sent by his father. Let's just hope he hasn't forgotten you, only seeing you might help to bring him home," Lynette advised.

Lynette got the exact location, then mother and daughter got into her SUV.

'How long have I been gone now? I'm pretty sure that my birthday came and went during this time,' Darmon thought.

Darmon had suffered wherever he went and had to fight for everything. He had suffered many new scars and bruises. The sack with the stolen good, while nearly empty, was stolen away after a fight that left him bleeding, in pain with a high fever. Since, that day of his escape, it has been a dog eat dog existence. He, couldn't recall how many times he had to beat up or get beaten up over scraps of food or a place to sleep.

Darmon was sure that he was being watched, 'Has my father finally find me? Am I going to be taken back to suffer or die?' he thought.

Darmon scrambled to gather what little he had, to make a run for it. The man that was watching him, saw he was going to run and decided to intervene. The man approached the client's target carefully.

Darmon had bolted upright and was just about to make a run for it when he heard his name, "Son, is your name Darmon?" the man asked calmly with a non menacing voice.

Darmon snapped his head back, looked at the man to see if he could outrun him. "Darmon, I'm not here on behalf of your father... Please don't run, there is someone coming that has been looking for you... Please will you wait for her?"

Darmon would have run had it not been for the word 'her', and during the moment of hesitation he lost his chance to flee.

A black SUV screeched to a halt as it entered the compound and out stepped two females one that he had vague memories of. Darmon was stunned and a warm feeling filled his heart of an older lady giving him candy, kisses and affection. When

Agatha saw her grandson she openly had tears rolling down her cheeks and started running towards him.

The next moment Darmon was embraced with his head cradled against Agatha's breast. "Oh my poor child..." Agatha was opening sobbing, "I finally found you." Darmon's legs gave out and he fell down to his knees, taking Agatha with him. Lynette stopped a few feet away also openly weeping tears of joy.

"How...?" Darmon tried to say as tears rolled down his own cheeks. Instead of answering Agatha just held her grandson, overcome with emotions herself.

Once, both had calmed down, Agatha opened up. "Darmon, I am your grandmother, Agatha, and you are my grandson. Let me take you home." At the mention of home Darmon tensed up before Agatha understood why. Agatha understood that the only 'home' that knew was back at his father's. "No my sweet child, I will never send or take you back there. You're going to go back to my home. Your new home."

Lynette helped both her mother and nephew stand up. "My sweet child, this is your aunt Lynette. We need to get into the car now and leave this place." Darmon scanned his belongs and went to pick them up, but was stopped by his grandmother. "Darling, leave that here. Everything you need going forward will be provided."

With that Darmon left the life he had known for the last 6 months, ensure of what the future would bring.

Agatha with Lynette's help got her grandson into the back seat of the SUV. Agatha, then got in beside her grandson in the back.

"My sweet child, you can rest now, we'll be home soon," Agatha took her grandson's head and cradled it against her left shoulder whilst draping her arm around her grandson's shoulders. Darmon slept, not in fear or with one eye open, but with a calmness that he had never felt before.

After confirming that Darmon was asleep, Agatha asked her daughter who was driving the SUV, "Lynette, call Sara and let her know, but do it quietly... I don't want to wake my sweet baby up."

"You got it mom."

Sara's phone was ringing and she noted that the caller id was her aunt. She looked around to make sure she wouldn't be overheard by her father and to make sure he wasn't around.

"Hello, Aunt Lynette," Sara said quietly.

"Sara, is it safe to talk?" Lynette inquired.

"Yes," Sara responded.

"We found him... we found your brother," Lynette spoke over the cell phone with joy in her voice.

"God, really. If this is a prank I will not be happy," Sara said, not wanting to get her hope up.

"Oh, honey, when it comes to something like this I would never tell a lie or play a prank. I know how much it will hurt," Sara's aunt assured her niece.

"Oh my god, OH MY GOD! Where is he now? Is he fine? Is he hurt?" Sara was almost jumping and bouncing around with joy.

"Woah, honey. One question at a time, but to answer your questions, 'In my car, going home. He's in the back seat with mom', 'Yes, as far as we can tell, just exhausted and sleeping on mom's shoulder', 'Nothing that we can immediately see'," Lynette answered her niece's questions in order.

"Good, Good! So, when can we see him?" Sara was really wanting to see her brother and to make sure with her own eyes he was back and unhurt.

"Mom, Sara is asking when she and the others can see him," Lynette asked her mother.

"Tell her soon, but let him settle in for a bit before we can arrange something," Agatha responded.

"Sara, mom says not yet and to let him settle before something is arranged. Listen, it's best that we end this call for now," Lynette responded to try and placate Sara.

"Okay, auntie, but you better keep me informed now that he's back," Sara said with some edge to her voice. She was already being denied access to her brother straightaway and she made it clear with her tone of voice that they better keep her informed.

"Will do honey, take care Sara. Bye for now!" Lynette ended the call.

After the call ended, Sara was on a high and wanted to jump with joy, but scrambled to find her mother and sister. Sara found both in the living room. Sara motioned for both to follow her to her bedroom. Once they were in her bedroom, Sara locked the door as she had been doing to prevent her father intruding and forcing her mother to do unspeakable things, and especially at night when her mother would sleep with her.

Evelyn after that fateful night had been either sleeping with Elizabeth or Sara, and never shared her marriage bed ever again. At first this just made Jacob even angrier where he wanted to take out his frustrations on Evelyn. He wanted to fuck her ass and throat hard but each time Jacob would try to drag Evelyn away, one of both of his daughters would intervene. After this happened for several months he gave up. It got the point where Jacob started to look at his daughters in a funny way before leaving the house to seek release in either the bottle or whores.

Both Evelyn and Elizabeth looked at Sara with confusion. Sara took a deep breath before saying, "Grandma, found Darmon."

Evelyn broke down and openly started to cry, this prompted both Sara and Elizabeth to comfort her whilst tears fell down both of their cheeks.

"Where...?" Evelyn started to say before sobs stopped her from saying more.

Sara wasn't sure if her mother meant 'Where is he now' or 'Where did they find him.' Sara responded to both, "He's in the car with grandma and auntie. If you're asking where he was found, I don't have the answer to that."

Sara continued, "Grandma, is going to take my brother to her house. She has advised that for now it is best to let him settle in before something could be arranged to see him."

That night, mother and daughters slept in the same bed with feelings of a weight lifted off their shoulders.

Agatha gently awoke Darmon when they returned home. "Darling, we're here. Wake up please my sweet child."

Darmon looked out of the window as he stirred awake. The house the car pulled up to was huge and Darmon was in awe. As the SUV pulled up right outside the front door he spotted two others waiting, he had no idea who they were though.

Lynette, exited the car and went around to open the door for her mother. Agatha exited the vehicle and beckoned for Darmon to join her. The two other women bounced down the steps to the car to assist. Darmon saw that these two women looked a lot like his aunt.

As they neared the SUV the shorter of the two new females exclaimed, "God, mom he stinks." Lynette glared at her and the woman went silent.

"Darmon, please pay her no mind, it was rude of her to say that," Lynette said to defend her daughter's rude behavior.

Darmon just laughed and said, "Yeah, sorry my last bath was about a month ago."

After this exchange, Agatha standing starting giving orders.

"Lynette, take Darmon to the downstairs bathroom. I will join you there shortly."

"Amber, go to the storage room and find something suitable from your father's belongs that might fit your cousin then bring them to the bathroom."

"Jade, help your mother take Darmon to the bathroom and then wait outside. You will take his dirty clothes to the furnace to be burned."

"Move now..."

Everyone quickly shuffled to follow the orders given. Agatha once she saw that her order's were being followed, turned to look at the maids and cook, "My grandson is now going to live with us. His name is Darmon. Going forward he is the young master of this house. Treat his words as if they come from me. Nobody is to know he is here, especially his father. I will not lose him or tolerate any disrespect towards him ever again. Is that clear?"

They all nodded in understanding. Agatha continued, "Please be respectful of him and his needs, he has suffered enough. If anyone hurts him in anyway, then they will feel my full wrath."

Agatha, then went to the bathroom, she knocked then entered. Lynette had been waiting for her mother to come as Darmon was looking around in stunned silence, "Mom?!"

"Darmon, my sweet child. We need to take your clothes off, can we do that please?" Darmon looked at this grandmother and aunt and nodded slightly.

Agatha, moved towards her grandson to remove his tattered shirt, Darmon helped by raising his arms. revealing his torso. Lynette gasped as she saw the scars and bruises over his body. Agatha just gritted her teeth in anger at how her son had treated his son like this and a tear trailed from her eye as she wondered what her grandson must of had to endure these over the years.

Agatha, then got to her knees and started to remove her grandson's ruined sneakers and what remained of his pants. Lynette gasped yet again, only this time not due to the many scars and bruises covering her nephews legs, it was what was uncovered just below the waistline. Darmon was sporting what looked like a 5 or 6 inch flaccid cock. This drew Agatha to scowl at her daughter.

Agatha used her grandson's hip to pull herself up and got a dangerously close look at his penis, "My sweet child, let me turn on the shower and then you can step inside." Agatha motioned for Darmon to enter the shower once the water was at the right temperature, he stepped into the shower and just stood under the water that fell onto his head. Darmon was enjoying the hot water cascading over him. Agatha saw that Darmon wasn't going to wash himself properly, so ordered her daughter into action, "Lynette, darling, please take Darmon's dirty clothing and give them to Jade then return, strip and help your nephew. We will need to check his body for any damage and make sure everything has been washed properly."

Lynette was stunned and shocked at what her mother just asked her, but didn't want to disappoint her especially since her mother was in a really good mood. Once she had returned from giving her nephew's clothing to Jade, Lynette turned to see her mother already naked and entering the shower.

When Darmon felt a pair of hands touch him, he jumped in shock and turned to face who it was and his eyes went wide as he saw the older lady, who said she was his grandmother, "Grandmother?"

"It's okay my sweet child. Grandmother is such a long word, you can call me grandma just as your cousins do. No one is going to hurt you here. I just want to make sure that your injuries aren't serious and to make sure that you're cleaned properly," Agatha soothed her grandson.

Lynette seeing her mother already naked and in the shower with her nephew was shocked, and she proceeded to strip her clothes off. Darmon heard some rustling and a sigh, looking over at his aunt he found that she was also naked and just about to enter the shower. Darmon looked at his grandma and saw that she was about 5ft 5, had a taut body with some large breasts, that didn't sag too much. Her areolas were dark and had little bumps all over them that surrounded her brown nipples, which stood out from her breasts about half an inch. Darmon noted that she had a trimmed pubic mound with some grey hair in what used to be a dark mound.

Darmon felt a stirring in his cock that he hadn't ever felt before and it confused him. He looked over at his aunt and compared her body with his grandma's. He noted that with some differences, mother and daughter's bodies were almost identical. His aunt's breasts were about the same size of his grandma's, but with noticeably less sag and smaller areola's and her pubic mound was completely bare. Darmon moved his gaze between his aunt and grandma, which resulted in further strange feelings and his cock to expand.

Darmon heard gasps and quiet moans from both women as their glances were directed towards his legs. He looked down and saw his cock stood to attention and rose up his navel. He was confused and didn't understand why this was happening, but to Agatha and Lynette, they marveled at how his cock had to be 9 inches or slightly more.

"Mom?!" Lynette said with shock as she looked at her mother to confirm this was still okay.

"Shush, darling. Don't draw attention to it, it's a natural reactions for a man," Agatha whispered, "Let's just wash him thoroughly."

Both women decided to try and ignore the erect cock, but both would still try to get sly looks. Even as they did this, mother and daughter, proceeded to wash the grime and muck using the scented shower and body wash. They had been doing this for a few minutes, before there was a knock at the door. Amber's voice calling from behind it, "Mom, I've got some clothes that I think will fit. Can I come in to lay them near the sink?"

Lynette didn't want her eldest daughter to see them naked and was just about to tell her daughter to leave them outside. Before, Lynette could answer, Agatha responded, "Yes, sweetie. The door is open."

Amber opened the door and got the shock of her life with an audible gasp from Jade who was a step behind. Both girls was stunned their grandmother, mother and

cousin were naked in the shower, especially since their cousin had the largest erect penis they had ever seen and that included some of the porn they might have watched.

"Ummm.. Mom?" Amber tried asked still reeling from what she was seeing.

"Leave the cloths and close the door on your way out, sweetie," Agatha said to jolt Amber into action. The women returned to washing Darmon as the door closed.

"Ooohhhh! Ummmmm... Did you see that, sis?" Jade gasped out.

"I'm not blind, Jade. I don't know what surprised me more, our grandma and mother naked with our cousin or what our cousin was packing."

"Yeah, do you think we'll get some answers later, sis," Jade asked.

"Probably... I mean most likely," Amber answered and then almost a whisper, "Damn, I'm wet..." which was also heard by Jade who remained silent.

Both girls waiting in the living room for their family, for that is what they were now. Admittedly, with their cousin here now the family was coming together, all they needed now is aunt Evelyn and their other cousins to join them, to be a full family. They refused to acknowledge their uncle Jacob as family. Both girls waited about 10 minutes before their grandma, mother and cousin exited the bathroom. They saw that the clothing left by Amber fit their cousin pretty well, maybe a little bit baggier on him than their father. Darmon had on some light jogging pants and a light t-shirt. The girls also noted that their grandma and mother were also fully clothed again.

"Amber, Jade. Can you go see if the cook has finished preparing dinner, then wait at the dinner table?"

"Of course, grandma," both girls answered simultaneously.

Agatha turned towards Darmon and said, "My sweet child, can you please join your aunt and I in the living room?" Darmon just nodded and followed.

"Please come sit beside me, my sweet child. It is good to get you back, you have no idea what we went through and how I've missed you. Darmon, this is your home now... Nothing is off limits here, do you understand?" Agatha asked to try to put any worries that her grandson might have over anything he might do, which would have resulted in some sort of punishment before.

Darmon's confused face painted a picture that Agatha feared would take time to fix. Agatha sighed, "My sweet child, you will not be confined to a single room, if you want or need something then ask. You can go wherever you want and take whatever you want. No one will stop you."

"I expect that things will be overwhelming for you over the next few days or even weeks. Slowly, I hope you can relax and feel at ease here. Everyone, and that includes your aunt and I as well as your cousins, will try to help. I hope you understand that you're safe here. No one will hurt you here, that is a promise," Agatha stated and her grandson just nodded.

"Grandma, mom! Dinner is ready," Jade shouted.

Agatha gets up from the couch, then reaches out to her grandson, open palm up. As Darmon reached up to take her hand, Lynette confirmed what her mother just said, "Darmon, I as well as my daughters will do whatever is needed."

Darmon holding on to his grandma's hand allowed himself to be lead towards the dinning room table. Agatha indicated for him to sit next to her as Darmon eyed the food on the table. He sees his grandmother, aunt and cousins start to put various different food items onto their plates. Darmon cautiously put a few items into his plate then got up to move to a dark corner of the room before sitting down.

"Mom?" Jade asked with concern in her voice.

Agatha, openly wept seeing this and muttering, "What has my son done to you, my poor child?"

Amber was shocked as much as Jade was. Lynette got up from the table and walked over to her nephew. Darmon saw someone approach and knew his food was going to taken away and just slumped down letting his plate fall from his hands as he looked up with such sadness in his eyes. Lynette's heart broke seeing this, she knelt beside him and drew him into a deep embrace with tears rolling down her face.

"Darmon, honey. No one is going to take your food away from you ever again. Please come back and sit at the table and enjoy our meal as a family," Lynette said as got up and reached out to her nephew. As Darmon got up he went to pick up his plate and the food that was dropped onto the floor. "Please leave that, it will be taken care of later."

Darmon was lead back to the dinner table and noticed that everyone was sobbing with tears streaks marring their pretty faces. "My sweet child, you need not hide to eat and eat as much as you want," Agatha said looking over at her grandson as she rested a hand over his. Darmon was given a new plate and started to put things on it, he noted that they were eating with knife and forks, but he tucked in with his hands.

This shocked everyone at the table, but more so Amber and Jade, "Grandma, mom! Uhhh, forgive me but I don't... I mean, I feel I've lost my appetite... Darmon can have my share, if he wants," Amber said in a shaky voice. Jade confirmed the same

thing and both stayed at the dinner table watching their cousin eat. It didn't take long for everyone to finish their dinner.

"Amber, sweetie, will you take your cousin to get washed up before bed and then take him to the guest room, so that he can rest for the evening. Once, he is settled in can you please return here?" Agatha requested of her granddaughter. Amber just nodded, got up from her chair and lead her cousin by the hand towards a different bathroom than the one he used to shower in. Amber pulled out a new toothbrush and toothpaste, so that Darmon could brush his teeth, wash his hands and face before taking him to the guest room.

15 minutes later, Amber returned to the dinning room and sat at the table where she heard, "... see my brother again, I'll kill him." From the tone of her mother's voice she was pissed.

"What did I miss?" Amber asked.

"Nothing much, mom is really really pissed at our uncle and wants to go kill him. Truthfully, I feel the same way. Any problems settling Darmon in?" Jade asked as Amber shook her head.

"Honey, we were waiting for you before we discussed things, properly," Lynette said sighing heavily.

"For the record, what you both saw in the bathroom wasn't anything sexual. While I admit my grandson is... Well, I'm not going to say it as we all saw it anyway," Agatha opened the discussion which caused both girls to giggle, "What your mother and I were doing was to make sure he was unharmed or at least the wounds on him were not life threatening. Also it

enabled us to thoroughly clean him and what you saw was the natural reaction of any male."

"The good news is that the scars and bruising on him aren't too serious, it is the mental trauma that has me worried, If what happened at the dinner table was any indication," Lynette continued.

"Can we get him some help from some doctor or something?" Amber asked.

"Yes, sweetie. I will find someone that can help him," Agatha promised.

"Amber, Jade. I know this may be hard for you, at least initially, but I ask that you be patient. Darmon is bound to make mistakes as he adjusts and this might make you both feel uncomfortable at times," Lynette asked both her daughters.

"Mom, what we just witnessed was so heart breaking, and I can live with some discomfort if it could help him," Jade confirmed, which was also mirrored by Amber.

"Over the next few days, weeks or even months, everyone will need to teach Darmon as he adjusts. I don't know to the extent that he has suffered and I hope over time he will open up to us about it. But as god is my witness, if he is upset at something that either Lynette, Amber or you do Jade, then god help you as you will know my wrath. He is going to get the love he was denied by his father," Agatha warned her family.

Lynette and her daughters cringed at this how the matriarch of the household stated this as an order and not a request.

After that they all retired to their rooms.

The next morning, Jade ventured to the guest room to check on her cousin and after opening the door a crack to look into his room, noticed that his bed hadn't been slept in. Jade panicked and ran down the hallway, shouting, "Mom, MOM!"

Lynette opened her door to see Jade running down the hallway towards her bedroom, "What is it, honey?"

With panic in her voice, "Darmon... Darmon's gone... His bed wasn't slept in."

Fear gripped Lynette heart and she started to run towards the guest bedroom. She threw open the door to scan the room and rushed in to look for clues. As she rounded the bed, she dropped to her knees in relief. Darmon was curled up on the floor asleep. Jade rounded the corner of the bed next to her mother, who was on her knees, and whispered, "Mom, why is he sleeping on the floor and not in bed?" Lynette just shook her head, not knowing the answer to that, but what she did feel was a burning rage start in her gut; not at her nephew's action but at the person that caused this.

Lynette, got up and lead her daughter away and back to the dinning room table, "Jade, honey, will you please wake up your grandmother and your sister and ask them to join us here." Jade nodded then moved to do what her mother asked.

10 minutes later, they were are all seated at the dinning room table. "Mom, did you know that Darmon slept on the floor last night?" Lynette opened.

"What?" Agatha said shocked.

"Yeah, Jade went to check on him this morning and found the bed empty and panicked, shouting for me. When I ran to his room, I found him curled asleep on the floor besides the bed. I didn't disturb him, but I have an rage starting in me that, I fear, I will not be able to control. MY BROTHER WILL PAY FOR THIS."

"Oh god, how much has my poor baby suffered," Agatha commented clearly upset.

It was at this point, Darmon came to the dinning room. "My sweet child, how are you doing? Did you sleep well?" Agatha asked.

"Yes, grandma. It was the first night in a long time that I slept soundly, not having to worry if I was going to wake up the next day alive or in pain from fighting to stay alive," Darmon responded, as he went to give his grandmother a big hug from behind. Agatha's heart melted not only from the hug but from him also calling her 'grandma'.

"Darmon, honey. Will you sit at the table? I'm sure breakfast will be served shortly," Lynette gestured towards the seat between her and her mother. Darmon sat where indicated with a smile on his face.

"Honey, we noticed you eating with your hands, at dinner yesterday... it's ummmm... not polite... hmmm, so do you mind if I teach you how to use cutlery?" Lynette asked her nephew. Darmon just looked at her and nodded.

"Mom, let me do it please," Amber requested. Getting a small nod from her mother, Amber sat besides her cousin and started to explain the use of knife and fork and spoons. Breakfast was brought out by the maids shortly after that.

Darmon, felt a little awkward as Amber would chuckle and giggle, praising him when he did it right. Amber felt proud to be teaching her cousin. After breakfast was finished, Agatha looked over at her grandson.

"My sweet child, you know this house is yours now, so don't be afraid to explore it... Nothing is off limits. Also will you humor an old lady and allow me to share your bed this evening? I just want to make up for lost time with you," Agatha asked looking Darmon in the eyes and putting a hand over his, "Do you have any questions?"

"Uhhmmm, is it really okay for me to walk around and you're not going to just send me to a room?"

"No my sweet child, I will not and no one else will ever do that to you again, I promise. Once, you have settled more then maybe we can talk more as a family. Will you also let me help you further, I believe that talking to some other professional might help you in the long term. Would you be okay with that?"

"Ohhh, ummm... okay, I would like that and maybe and maybe."

Jade had a confused look following her cousin's last statements and looked around to see if anyone else was confused. Lynette saw this and whispered, "He's intelligent and answered mother's request and questions." Jade suddenly recalled the request and questions of her grandma.

"My sweet child, do you mind if we take a few photo's of you alone and with each member of the family? This is a day to celebrate," Agatha asked. Darmon just nodded.

Amber used her phone to take various photo's and then sent them to everyone. Agatha in turn sent them to her granddaughter, Sara.

Sara's phone chimed with some messages. She noticed they were from her grandmother and went to her room, locked the door and then opened the messages. It was a string of photo's that had her weeping with joy at seeing her brother with her grandma and aunt's family.

Over the next few hours as and when she could get her mother and sister alone, she relayed everything that happened recently and then showed the messages and photo's to them. Evelyn clearly wept with joy, knowing a weight had just lifted off her. Elizabeth was equally smiling, but behind the smiles was a bitter feeling that

hurt more than she expected it would. How much of her brother's suffering was due to her actions? The guilt was eating at her and she didn't know how to cope with it.

"When can we go see him? I want to hold my baby boy in my arm's. I don't care what happens to me anymore. I no longer care for Jacob and what he has done to this family. Any love I had for him is dead," Evelyn asked and stated.

"Mom, grandma has advised to let my brother settle in and adjust. I also believe that she is looking at getting some sort of counseling for him to get pass some of the trauma. Trust me, I also want to run off and see him, but we just have to be patient," Sara relayed the message from her grandmother.

"I will try, baby. Save those messages and photos to a private cloud server, then delete the messages along with any photos of your brother from your phone. Your father cannot ever find out about this," Evelyn advised.

Both Elizabeth and Sara nodded.

Darmon started to explore the large house, he has already been to the entry hall, living room and dinning room. Next he went to the kitchen where he saw the maids and the cook cleaning up from breakfast and getting ready for lunch.

"Hey, young master," the cook, a portly old woman, said as Darmon entered. The maids just smiled at him, winked and continued to work. "Hey, catch," the cook threw an apple at Darmon. Darmon instantly brought his hand up to catch the apple, "Nice, reflexes."

"Uhhh, thanks, but I wasn't hungry. Breakfast was good and very filling," Darmon said as he went to put the apple down on the counter top.

The cook chuckled, "Thanks. Keep it for later in case you get hungry."

"Okay, thanks. My name is Darmon."

"We know, young master. I'm Cynthia, but you can call me Cyn for short, you know on account of how sinful I cook for this household," the cook laughed at her own joke. "The maids are Helen and Alice. It's good that your here, the mistress was besides herself these last few 12 or so years and more so the last 6 months."

The maids each gave him a small bow and bright smiles. Darmon smiled in return, then left the kitchen. Darmon spotted some stairs going down and felt a pang of fear. Cyn saw this and said, "It's just the wine cellar and games room down there, nothing to fear. There's no rush to explore everything today, I am sure in time you're feel a lot different."

Darmon left the kitchen and then decided to go upstairs. He opened doors to see what he could find. There were 3 other bathrooms upstairs and 5 bedrooms. Darmon opened the door to one of the bedrooms and saw a sight that stopped him dead in is tracks. Jade, the youngest of his cousins was almost naked, she only had on panties. Jade was about 5'2" tall and had small perky breasts with a slim waist. Her nipples were light pink with small areola's. Jade looked up in shock, but quickly recovered.

"Darmon, my handsome cousin. Thanks for coming to my bedroom, but it's not polite to just barge into rooms without knocking first," Jade gently advised her cousin.

"Hmmm... Ohhh!!! I'm sorry," Darmon stammered fully expect to get punished for doing something wrong.

"No harm done, here in this house no one is going to say anything, but should, I mean when, you eventually go out then it is something to keep in mind. Come sit on my bed," Jade said as she pointed towards her bed.

Darmon sat on the end of Jade's bed and Jade came to sit beside him not bothering to put anything on or covering her breasts. Darmon's crotch started to react and made him fidget.

"I expect a lot of things will be new to you. We're all here to help you and teach you, right from wrong," Jade continued in a gently voice. Darmon just nodded.

"I can see you're looking at my breasts... Have you ever seen a naked woman before?" Jade asked.

Darmon just shook his head before remembering his grandmother and aunt, "Uhhh, just grandma and auntie."

"Yeah, thought so. I don't mind you looking at me when we're alone. Please don't stare at me or any other woman, it just not something that a gentleman would or should do. Do you understand?" Jade asked as she looked at her cousin who was looking at her breasts, who suddenly snapped his head up as it was probably something he shouldn't be doing.

Darmon looked into his cousin's eyes and nodded. "You'll understand better as you get more used to living here, free... Do you have any questions?" Jade said. Darmon just shakes his head.

"Well, if you do then do not hesitate to ask any of us," Jade continues to advise her cousin, who just nods again.

"I'm sorry, I was getting ready to go out to see some friends. I would take you with me, but I feel that would be too soon. I'm sorry, I know you just got here, but this was something that was arranged a long time ago," Jade continued, patting her cousin on this thigh before getting up and putting on a bra and dress.

"No need to be, and thanks for not shouting or hitting me," Darmon replied whilst looking down. This made Jade choke back a sob, she turned back to face her cousin embrace him and then pull his head down to kiss him on the cheek.

"None will do that ever again... At least in this house, I promise you that," Jade said to comfort her cousin.

Darmon stood up with his jogging pants clearly tented. Jade seeing this, blushed. Darmon lowered his lips to kiss his cousin on the cheek to mimic what she had done before leaving. As her cousin was leaving, Jade had big smile, "Darmon, I'll see you later for dinner, okay."

Darmon continued exploring the house and after the encounter with Jade decided to knock on door before entering. Most of the rooms Darmon encountered were empty and after knocking getting no reply he would enter. He discovered empty bedrooms, bathrooms and storage rooms. Darmon eventually got to a door and after knocking he heard, "Yes, come in."

Entering the room, he found his grandmother at her dressing table, "Oh my sweet child, come in a sit on my bed and let's have a chat." Darmon moved to the bed and sat down facing his grandma with her back to him, he could clearly see the reflection of his grandma in the mirror, looking at him with a big smile.

"It is nice to see a polite young gentleman knocking on doors," Agatha said smiling.

"Oh... Ummm... I didn't know... hmm, Jade told me it was polite to," Darmon responded.

"Oh, did you catch her in a compromising position?" Agatha asked with a chuckle.

"Uhm... yeah... she was changing clothes to go out," Darmon admitted.

"Hmm, I see. Well, I'm glad she didn't yell at you or do something rash. Also, she wasn't wrong, if you haven't been granted permission to always enter a lady's bedroom then it is polite to knock first. With that said, I give you permission to enter my room day or night without fear of any negative reactions," Agatha said smiling at her grandson via the mirror.

"I really do hope that in time you will open up to me and the girls and feel safe here. Until you're ready to tell us about what happened at your other home, I will not ask. Instead, can I instead ask what you did after you escaped from that place, but only if you feel up to it, I won't pressure you at all?" Agatha asked, really wanting this to be a step towards her grandson opening up about his ordeal.

Darmon paused for a short while, recalling what happened after he ran away, up until his grandma and aunt founding him. Over the next hour he relayed in detail how he stole items to help pay for his escape and how he fought to retain his stolen goods. He told her of how he had to travel from place to place, battling for food and a place to sleep. How he had to fight for everything he had and how he lost everything when a group attacked him leaving him to die after the attack, bleeding. How, crawling and stumbling, he managed to find a place to rest, but had a fever and doesn't know how he survived. How he knew someone was watching him and was ready to run again for fear that he was going to be dragged back home. How he felt when he saw the kind older lady that visited when he was younger and how he missed her kisses, cuddles, affection and with a chuckle the candy she used to give him.

Darmon, looked back at his grandma and saw tears in her eyes and wet cheeks. Darmon got up from the bed to wrap his arms around her. "I'm sorry, my sweet child. I tried to get you away from that place, but your father almost made it impossible. I had a plan to get you out after your 18th birthday, but that didn't happen because of your escape. I never once forgot about you."

"I had to do it, grandma. My father's punishments were getting worse and I don't know if I would be alive now had I stayed," Darmon admitted, releasing his grandma and standing straight, clearly scared of what he didn't know.

Agatha got up and faced her grandson, pulled his head down and on tiptoes kissed him on his forehead, eyes, cheeks, and a peck on the lips. Darmon was confused and didn't know how to react since this was by far the most affection anyone had ever given him. Agatha giggled as she saw his expression, "Oh, my sweet child. I love you so much and would never do anything that could or would hurt you. I'm just showing you how much you mean to me."

"Uhhh, okay," Darmon smiled and proceeded to kiss his grandmother the same way she just did which made Agatha swoon with pleasure.

"Come, let's sit on the couch over there," Agatha said as she lead her grandson to the couch and they sat close together. "I know you're 18 now the same age as Jade. Your birthday happened during your escape and you're with us now, how do you feel if we celebrated it a few months late?"

"I would like that... I mean, if you want to that is... It's just I've never had a birthday party, ever!" Darmon replied as a wave of emotions swept over him. He wonder, 'Would he laugh like Sara did on her birthday?', 'Would he be able to enjoy eating sweet things?' Darmon wasn't sure and wanted to find out.

"It's settled then, I will arrange everything for next week and we'll celebrate together with your aunt and cousins," Agatha's face shone brightly as she made a promise to her grandson. "Come give me another kiss and continue exploring, if you want to." Agatha brought his face close to hers and gently gave him a kiss on the lips that lingered a little longer, and had Agatha sighing contently.

With a warm feeling in his chest following the kiss his grandma just gave him, which was full of love, Darmon continued exploring. He had just about seen everything within the house and his travels brought him to the back door. He hesitated, afraid

he'd be going someplace he wasn't allowed. One of the maids saw the young master hesitate and moved up to him, lay a gentle hand on his arm, then smile at him as he looked at her, "That leads to the back yard and you're free to wander out there. The mistress has made it perfectly clear that nothing is off limits to you, young master."

"Mistress? Master?" Darmon asked puzzled by the words.

"Yes, your grandmother is the head of this household, the matriarch, and is our mistress, she has hired us to maintain the house. As for you, young master... Well, we know that you are the only male household member and it would do your grandmother a disservice if we called you anything but 'Master'."

"So, I can go out there?" Darmon pushed to make sure it was okay for him to do so. The maid just nodded whilst smiling. Darmon couldn't be certain yet if that was Helen or Alice. Darmon reasoned that in time he would be able to tell who's who later.

Darmon opened the back door and went outside. He had to shield his eyes from the bright sun. Previously, he was never allowed out and only saw the sky and felt the sun through windows when he was allowed out of the basement.

It was a hot sunny day and the gardens were beautifully laid out with a cobble stone path leading around the corner. Darmon heard voices from around the bend and decided to see who they belonged to. As he rounded the corner, he saw a large swimming pool with a number of loungers spread around and he saw a pavilion that looked liked another kitchen outside with another room attached to it. Darmon followed the sound of the voices and found his aunt and her eldest daughter, Amber, in bikinis soaking up the sun. He was cautious as he approached for fear he was intruding and would be sent away. Amber noticed her cousin approach, "Mom, we have company". Lynette looked up and saw her nephew approaching and smiled at him.

"Darmon, honey. It is a nice day today and we decided to take a moment away from all the stress over the last few months to relax. Would you like to join us?" Lynette asked. Darmon just nodded his head and Lynette motioned to an empty lounge.

"Hey, Darmon. Can I offer you a drink or something?" Amber asked.

"Amber, sweetie, I don't think your cousin is ready for something like that yet, just some fruit juice for now," Lynette corrected.

Darmon was looking at the pool of water as he sat down and couldn't figure out the purpose of it, "Honey, can I ask if you know how to swim?" his aunt asked him.

Darmon shook his head, pointed at the large pool of water, asked, "I don't even know what that is."

Amber couldn't understand how her cousin didn't even know what a swimming pool was and laughed at the silly question. A quick stern look from her mother quickly shut her up.

"Honey, it is called a swimming pool. It is used to exercise and cool off when it is hot outside. It can also be used for fun and games when there are many people around," Lynette said, she enjoyed teaching her nephew new things and loved watching his face glow when he learns something new. "You must be hot in those, do you want to relax better and maybe we can teach you to swim, it would be your first swimming lesson."

Darmon's face lit up, knowing he wasn't being sent away or even ignored like he was used to and nodded to accept the invitation.

"Amber, can you find one of your father's swimming trunks and bring it back, for Darmon to put on?" Lynette requested of her daughter.

"Sure, mom," Amber answered before getting up to return inside the house to find the swimming trunks and get some fruit juice from the kitchen for her cousin.

"Honey, I don't know if you've found the games room as you explored, it was downstairs next to the cellar," Lynette said to continue the conversation going with her nephew.

Darmon shook his head, "Uhhh, not yet. I was a little afraid to go down."

"Oh, honey. My mother, your grandma, has already explained that you have nothing to fear or worry about in this house and never will there be a need to be. You will find that no door are ever locked in this house and that includes the bathrooms. Once, you have figured out where everything is, I just hope that to save some embarrassment you knock on bathroom doors before entering. You have to understand that for the last two years this has been a female only household, excluding any male staff, but they know never to come into the main house."

It was at this time Amber returned with some trunks that should fit her cousin and a large pitcher of fruit juice with an empty glass, "Here, you are cousin. Go change into these and let us give you your first swimming lesson."

Darmon took the trunks from Amber and proceeded to strip where he was. He pulled the jogging pants down and off his feet, before picking them up and placing them on the lounge. Darmon's cock was exposed to the women and both glanced down to see his flaccid cock, which looked impressive to both women. Lynette estimated his size flaccid was about 6 inches long and thick and doubted, when erect, she could even get one whole hand around his girth. Amber was surprised at her cousin just stripping out in the open and looked over at her mother, who just raised her eyebrow at her daughter. Both women didn't want to draw attention to this and chose to remain silent, for fear this might cause him embarrassment.

As Darmon put his legs into the trunks, pulling them up, both women, who continued to look, were thinking the same thing, 'Fuck, how would that feel to hold when erect.'

Both Lynette and Amber were ashamed to find their bikini bottoms were starting to get wet.

Amber put the fruit juice onto a table and both women, lead Darmon towards the shallow end of the swimming pool. They all entered with Darmon a little wary of the water, but was reassured with the smiles on both women.

The next half-hour was spent teaching Darmon how to float, kick his legs and move his arms. By the end of the lesson, Darmon would hold himself up in to water and using arms and legs move small distances. He was clearly enjoying this and laughed alongside his aunt and cousin, he couldn't recall anytime in the past that he had so much fun. When it was time to exit the pool Darmon seemed a little disappointed, but followed the women out of the pool.

"Helen, Alice. Could one of you please bring a towel for Darmon," Lynette requested with a slightly raised voice. Everyone heard a faint, "Yes, madam." As they returned to the loungers one of the maids had brought a fresh towel as requested. "Thank you, Helen," Lynette thanked the maid. Darmon noted this exchange and now had a name to a face. "Come honey, let me dry you and then you can enjoy your drink," Lynette asked as she motioned for her nephew to come closer.

Lynette had already examined his body whilst they gave him a shower and knew what to expect. Once Darmon was dry, he picked up his drink and drained half of it in one go. "Wow, this is good," Darmon commented.

"Darmon, will you stay with us and sunbathe, to enjoy this beautiful day?" Amber asked. Darmon nodded and Amber picked up a suntan lotion bottle, "I hope you don't mind me apply suntan lotion on you, I don't want you to get sun burnt." Darmon looked at his cousin and nodded. Amber, moved over to him as she chuckled to herself and made herself a promise to break her cousins habit of just nodding.

This was the first time, Amber was going to see Darmon's body up close. Yes, she saw it during the swimming lesson, but this was different as she would now to

running her hands over his body. Amber applied some lotion to her hands and start to spread it on his back. Amber saw all the scars and some recent bruises, she traced the main scars on his back, overcome with something she couldn't quite understand, kissed each of the scars on his back with tears in her eyes. Darmon was surprised and a little confused, but neither said or did anything. Lynette looked on with some concern seeing her daughter doing this.

Amber, wrapped her arms around her cousin and rested her head against his shoulder blades before whispering, "I'm sorry Darmon you had to suffer like this and our inability to get you out."

Darmon turned around in her arms and looked into her face and kissed her cheek as he had done to Jade, hoping this will tell her he understood. Amber had a surprised face and then put her face against his neck and cried. Darmon just held her until she calmed down.

Lynette watched this and smiled. Amber was doing exactly what was needed for the whole family to heal. Lynette knew that this healing was both ways, they were going to heal her nephew and he in turn will heal each of them. It was true that neither Lynette or her daughters had ever seen her nephew or cousin, but they knew of the torture he endured and could clearly see it first hand from the many scars on his body, this made his suffering all the more real for them. All they could see was the boy who despite his origins had brought joy once again to Lynette's mother and the girls grandmother.

Once Amber had calmed down, she laughed, kissed him on the cheek and said, "Let's get your front done also". Everyone spent the next hour sunbathing before they were called to lunch.

Lunch was just as tasty as breakfast and last night's dinner. Darmon even used knife and fork to eat. Darmon noticed that Jade was missing, but then recalled her saying she would be out and will return for dinner.

After lunch, Amber held Darmon's hand and lead him to the stairs leading down. Darmon panicked and pulled back, clearly in fear. Amber quickly pulled him into her embrace and soothed him, "Hey, Hey! I'm not going to do anything to harm or hurt you. Please understand, I will never do that... I was just going to show you the games room we spoke of at the pool. I promise we'll going to only have fun."

Darmon, while still fearing this was all another trick was lead by Amber down the stairs. Amber showed her cousin the wine cellar and a little further down the hall, the games room. The large room had a pool table, ping pong table, some arcade machines, an air hockey table and a large TV screen with a large u-shaped couch. To one side of the room there was a bar with various different drink and a door leading to a bathroom which had a bath as well as a shower and a toilet with wash basin next to it.

Darmon was stunned at everything he saw, "You mean... I mean... I can come here whenever I want?"

Amber smiled and how her cousin's face lite up and said, "of course, silly. Everything in this house is yours... You're free to go anyplace you like in this house. I'm sure mom and grandma have already said it, there are no restrictions or limits imposed on you. If you're hungry, go to the kitchen I'm sure the cook or maids will always give you something. If you want to take naps then do so wherever you like."

Amber paused a little to let Darmon process this before continuing, "No one will ever touch you in any way that would harm you. While, I admit that my mother, sister and I don't know you well, yet; I do know that grandma loves you. We might not all see eye to eye on thing, and may even clash with what you think is right or wrong, and I can tell you that we are also hurting, and as you feel more at home, this will I suspect will turn to joy and laughter. I hope that in time you would gives us the chance and we can heal together."

Darmon just smiled and nodded, this made Amber laugh out loud, remembering her promise to herself, "Darmon, it is nice to see you happy and smiling again, but it would be nice to hear your joy instead of just seeing you nod."

Darmon smiled and started to nod before stopping and saying, "Okay!"

Amber spent time with Darmon showing him the various games and even sat him down on the couch, to watch a movie together. Darmon was amazed at the screen and watched a Disney movie whilst holding hands with Amber. After the movie ended Amber got up still holding Darmon's hand and said, "Dinner will be served in about an hour. Let's go up and get ready, I will find you something nice to wear for dinner. I'm sure tomorrow will be a busy day for you."

Amber lead Darmon back upstairs and down to a room that he hadn't ventured into, yet, where there was closets full of men clothing. Amber looked through the closets and picked out, some trousers, shirt, belt, underwear and shoes that looked like they would fit him. "Can you carry these and follow me to my room?" Amber asked.

Darmon was about to nod again, but then responded, "Yes." This brought a big smile to Amber, she lead them upstairs and to a room that he had seen before and looked around, when no one answered his knock. Amber moved to the bed and her closet before selecting an evening dress with matching lingerie. "Please take off the trunks, have a quick shower in my en-suite bathroom, then come back to change into the clothes we brought up," Amber told her cousin.

Darmon slipped off his trunks, before Amber, leaving the trunks on the floor, went to the bathroom. A short while later, Darmon called Amber for some help, "Umm, Amber. How do I turn the shower on and off?"

Amber had stripped off her own bikini as Darmon went to her bathroom, so she walked into the bathroom naked. Darmon looked over at her and saw that her breasts were slightly larger than her sisters but not as large as her mothers. She also had a shaved pubic mound with the exception of a small landing strip. Darmon's body reacted instantly and his cock grew in thickness and length to over 9 inches. Amber was a little stunned, but quickly recovered and proceeded to show Darmon how to turn on and off the shower. After the shower had started and Darmon got in.

"Do you mind if I get in with you? I could show you how to use the shampoo and body wash," Amber asked.

Darmon this time just nodded as his mouth and throat were dry. Amber showed him how to shampoo and wash avoiding his large thick cock, even though she was feeling very horny and was thankful of the water that was hiding how wet she was. 10 minutes later they had both showered, dried themselves and back in her bedroom.

Amber, was not hiding the fact she was looking at her cousin cock, and quietly said, "Darmon, I would love to help you with your issue, but I really need to confirm with mom and grandma... I'm really sorry, I can't help you... For now please change whilst I do the same."

Darmon had trouble, initially, putting on his underwear and trousers until Amber had gotten ready and was applying her makeup. It had taken him about 10 minutes to calm down. Once fully dressed, they got the call that dinner was ready.

Amber dressed in a nice low cut dress had her arm linked with her cousin's, who was sporting a very smart shirt and trousers combination. As they entered the dinning room. Jade who had returned, dressed in casual clothing had stood up to add food onto her plate, dropped the plate, it hit the floor as she saw her sister and cousin enter. "OMG! OMG!"

Agatha and Lynette looked over and both smiled. "Oh, how lovely, if I had known it was going to be formal night I would have dressed up also," Agatha commented. Lynette looked just as stunned as Jade and just nodded.

"My sweet child, you look very handsome today. It seems that Amber helped you a lot today," Agatha noted which brought a smile to Darmon's face and slight hardening of his cock as he remembered his cousin naked. "This clearly shows that you are now the man of the house and as such you should take the place on the other side of the dinner table as is fitting for that position."

Amber, lead him to that location and then sat to his right. After Jade had recovered she moved to take the place to his left. This brought chuckles from both Agatha and Lynette.

"What about me, what if I wanted either of those spots, girls?" Lynette asked with a chuckle.

"Hmm, you should have been faster then, mom," Jade stated, then with a giggle, "I'm sure that there is another seat that you could use, mom." Jade pointed towards Darmon's lap. Darmon blushed and didn't know how to respond and act.

Lynette seeing this laughed, "I don't want to embarrass my nephew, besides it's too soon for that..."

Darmon couldn't understand why everyone was laughing as he clearly didn't understand the statement and his expression was puzzlement. Little did Darmon know then how much later, he would welcome and enjoy it.

Dinner proceeded with small banter, as Jade told them she went to see some friends and this was arranged prior to Darmon's arrival, so couldn't be postponed. She said she had fun, but was glad to be back home.

"Remember, my sweet child! I will be sleeping in your bedroom this night. Go have some fun with your cousins until bedtime, then Jade will show you where you can brush your teeth and wash before bed," Agatha reminded her grandson.

With that, both his cousins dragged him to the living room to play some card games. The girls taught him a game they all enjoyed. As they say time flies when you're having fun and it was time for bed before they knew it, they were all reluctant to retire since they were all enjoying themselves.

Jade lead him to the same bathroom Amber had the previous night, near his bedroom where he brushed his teeth and washed up before leading him to the guest bedroom, which was now his bedroom. "Darmon, you looked very handsome today. My dad's clothes fit you well, maybe not a perfect fit but pretty close," Jade commented as she smiled at her cousin.

"Uhhh, thanks. I think... No... I mean... you're beautiful too," Darmon stammered which made Jade blush.

"You can remove those clothes and hang them up in the closet, so that you would be ready for bed. I'm going to leave you here now, good night, cousin," Jade advised before she leaned up and gave him a quick kiss on the lips before running off with a giggle.

Darmon entered his bedroom, removed his clothes and hanged them up as advised into the closet, just leaving him in his new boxers. He waited 10 minutes for his grandma to arrive before he settled down to sleep where he did yesterday. Darmon was nearly asleep when his grandma entered his room. She scanned the room and empty bed and sighed. Agatha undressed, she was dressed in thin nightie with no bra and plain panties. Agatha walked over to her grandson, "Darmon, my sweet child. Why are you sleeping on the floor, wouldn't you feel more comfortable on the bed?"

Darmon, didn't understand and just looked at his grandma before saying, "This has always been my sleeping place. I've never slept in a bed before or even had a blanket for a long time, the cold floor is all I know."

"Oh, my sweet child. If I could sleep with you on the floor I would, would you humor an old lady like me and join me on the bed? I would like to hold my grandson all night," Agatha requested in a gentle calming voice.

"Am I allowed?" Darmon questioned, seeking permission for something that he's never been able to use before.

"Of course, you are. Let me pamper you a little, please my sweet child," Agatha reassured her grandson.

Darmon got up from the floor and got under the covers after Agatha lifted them up for him before getting in bed besides him. Agatha opened her arms and Darmon scooted to lay his head in her right armpit. "Darmon, my sweet child, if you need someone to sleep besides you each night until you're comfortable with it then I, your aunt or one of your cousins will be more than happy to do so."

Agatha, soothed her grandson's head by running her hand through his hair. Agatha chuckled, "I think one of our tasks tomorrow should be to get you a hair cut as well as clothes that are only for you. I'm amazed at how you have integrated with your aunt and cousins. I feel they love you or at least starting to love you and not just doing this out of pity."

Darmon just remained silent as Agatha continued in a quiet voice, "I'm glad that none of them rejected you, I would have been surely upset if they had. What Amber did today showed that she was willing to help you and you looked very handsome this evening. I know you might feel that I abandoned you, so many years ago, but I didn't."

Darmon was shocked at that last statement, "No, I understand better now, but at the time I missed you and the candies you would give me, I thought I had done something wrong and you didn't like me anymore. My father started to beat me more after you left. I thought he did it because I did something to make you go away."

"Oh my sweet child, you did nothing wrong. Your father forced me leave and even forced me to stay away from your mother and sisters. He even forbade Lynette, your father's sister, and her daughters to go and see you and them. I tried so many times

to find a way to get back to you or to change your father's mind. He was stubborn and refused any of my attempts to reconcile. We had a plan, when you turned 18, when you would become a legal adult. He would have no right to stop you from joining me here, but those plans went... well, you know that plan couldn't be put into action since you went missing."

Agatha, sighed and sobbed, recalling the torment she went through and what she subjected her daughter and granddaughters to. Agatha begged and cried for weeks for someone to help her. She collapsed many times and had to take sleeping pills at night, so she could get some rest. She knew the burden she had put on her daughter and by extension her granddaughters, and was amazed that didn't resent her or Darmon. Then she recalled what her grandson had told her after he ran away and how happy she is now. Agatha felt a weight lift off her shoulders and said, "I'm glad we found you, my sweet child. I'm so happy that you're with me or us, I should say, now."

"Let's get some sleep and see what tomorrow brings. Good night, my handsome child," Agatha said.

"Good night, grandma," Darmon replied.

During the night, Darmon had nightmares, where he smiling as his father beat him near to the point of death and then later how he fought other beggars and tramps for scraps of food that he managed to find.

Darmon was thrashing around in bed which awoke Agatha. Agatha tried to calm her grandson but nothing was working. She remembered how she would calm her babies when they were restless and uncovered her breast before presenting her teat to her grandson's mouth. Like a baby, seeking comfort in the closeness of someone that would love and protect him, he latched on and settled as he gently suckled. This confused Agatha, on the one hand she was building a comforting, supportive and affectionate relationship with her grandson and on the other hand, having him suckle, brought forth feelings she thought were dead in her. At least for today, Agatha didn't care and only wanted to be there for her grandson. Agatha

doesn't remember when she fell asleep and she didn't know when her grandson stopped suckling.

The night passed quietly after that, but Agatha woke up early, quietly left her grandson sleeping under the covers.

Agatha went to wake up her daughter and then granddaughters asking them to meet at the dinning room table.

Lynette and the girls were concerned why they were asked to come so early. Agatha has asked one of the maids to make a large pot of coffee and was drinking her second mug as her family arrived. "Mom, is everything okay?" Lynette asked with concern.

"Yes, darling. I just wanted to call a family meeting to discuss somethings," Agatha confirmed.

"Umm, shouldn't Darmon be here if this is a family meeting," Amber asked.

"Yes, sweetie, normally he would and I'm glad you see him as family, but in this case it is about him that we need to discuss."

After a small pause, Agatha continued, "Okay, can I get accounts of each of your interactions with him yesterday. We don't need to cover the first night where Jade thought he had gone missing again."

"In the interests of transparency, I will start. Darmon related to me what happened from the time he escaped to when we found him..."

Agatha then related the events that Darmon told her. Everyone was silent during this and at the end of this Jade uttered a single word that summed it all up, 'Fuck!'

"Last night, I found him trying to sleep on the floor again, he confirmed this was all he knew and when I said he could sleep in the bed, he asked for permission." Agatha wept at this point. Amber went over to comfort her grandma, "He asked if he was allowed *sob* Do you know how much that hurt?"

"FUCK, FUCK, FUCK!" Jade stated. Lynette looked at her daughter and saw how this was affecting her. Jade continued, "That is something we take for granted. Who needs permission to sleep in their own beds?"

Amber was silent but clearly hurt. Lynette also remained silent, but was cursing her brother.

"I told him that I was so happy that none of you rejected him, despite never knowing him. I told him we were so happy after he was found. He thought he had done something to make me leave him and that was why I never returned. *sob* I told him it wasn't him, but his father and we tried many things to get him and of our plans when he had turned 18 which were ruined after he ran away."

Agatha paused again, sobbing as she continued, "During the night he had some nightmares and all attempts at calming him down failed until I presented my teat to him. He suckled and calmed down. I'm not ashamed of what I did to calm him and wouldn't hesitate again to do the same. I wanted you all to know how much I'm willing to do to help heal him. I'm not going to lie, both Darmon and I slept soundly following that."

After a pause with nothing else to add, Agatha said, "Lynette?"

"Well, I didn't interact with him a whole lot yesterday. He found both Amber and I at the pool, I had to explain what a swimming pool was then offered him a swimming lesson. Amber went to get one of Martin's trunks and a drink for him, fruit juice", Lynette started her account of her interactions with her nephew.

"Would you believe it when we asked him to change into the trunks, he just stripped there and then, and I mean both Amber and I saw him completely naked. He doesn't have the same hangup as a lot of other boys or men, but then again he doesn't need to feel ashamed," Lynette chuckled at the memory. "Both Amber and I spent sometime teaching him to swim, he's a quick learner and got the basics down in less than 30 minutes. I offered for Darmon to sunbathe with us and he accepted. After lunch I didn't see him again until dinner last night."

Agatha, smiled and thanked her daughter before saying, "Amber, I will ask Jade next since I believe her encounter with Darmon was shorter. I hope you don't mind." Amber just shook her head.

"Well, there's not much to tell. Darmon barged into my room as I was getting ready to go out. He saw me topless. I asked that in future it would be polite to knock on door before entering and he said he was sorry. I didn't cover up or show any embarrassment, but as I was getting changed I did notice a tent in his jogging pants. I, of course, ignored it to save him any embarrassment, and when I did cover up I gave him a quick kiss on the cheek and he returned it before leaving. As he was just about to leave I told him that I would see him at dinner. The next time I saw him was when I dropped the plate after seeing how handsome he was and got jealous of my sister for being on his arm," Jade told her family of her interactions with her cousin.

"After dinner, we went to have some fun and taught him how to play a card game. It was fun playing with him. Later, I helped take him to brush his teeth and wash up before taking him to his bedroom. As I left him at his bedroom door after advising to store his clothes in the closet, I gave him a quick kiss on the lips before running away giggling. That's all."

Agatha smiled at her granddaughter, "Thanks you sweetie. Before, we hear Amber's account, can I ask both Lynette and you Jade, how you feel about Darmon? I want you to be totally honest with me."

Lynette and Jade looked at each other, before Lynette answered her mother, "If you're asking if we feel our actions are purely as a result of pity then you're wrong."

I'm not going to deny that having never meet him I wasn't sure what to expect or how my feeling would go. Yes, initially, I might have pitied him and maybe I still do a little, but I'm sure, as I get to know him better that will turn into something greater. I can see how intelligent he is and how much joy he brings to you mother."

Jade confirmed her mother assessment.

Agatha smiled, "Thank you, Amber your turn. I feel your interactions with Darmon were the most yesterday."

"Well, mom has already related everything that lead to him at the pool and what we saw. What mom didn't tell you was that after we asked him to sunbathe I offered to apply suntan lotion to his body. It was going to be my first time seeing his body up close. Of course, we saw his body as we gave the swimming lesson but this was different," Amber started her account.

Amber paused before continuing, "As I was apply the lotion, I traced the many scars and saw the recent bruises. I don't know what came over me but I kissed each of the scars on his back as tears fell from my eyes and then lay my head against his back. I'm not sure how Darmon took this, maybe I sensed some surprise or confusion from him, but he didn't say or do anything. I somehow wanted to comfort him, so I wrapped my arms around him, telling him how sorry I was on his suffering and how we were sorry we couldn't get him out."

"I have to admit that when Amber did this I was concerned, more for my daughter's mindset than anything that Darmon was thinking," Lynette confessed.

Amber stopped, looking around at her family to see their reactions before continuing, "It was at this point that Darmon turned around whilst I had my arms wrapped around him. He faced me and looked me right in the eyes and all I sensed was concern for me and not sadness at what we couldn't do. I really don't know what I felt as he kissed me on the cheek. The kiss somehow conveyed his understanding, don't tell me how I can be sure, I just do, I felt it..."

"I'm not afraid to say I cried against his neck as he held me. I tell you, my cousin, knew and comforted me until I calmed down. I don't know what it is about him, but I don't feel pity for him. I love him, mom. I truly do. I know this doesn't make sense but I know how I feel."

"I had a smile on my face as I witnessed this, mom. I knew then this family was going to be healed. It might take time, but I knew it. I knew of some of the suffering he has endured from what you told me, mom. I just know that with love this family and I mean everyone, except my brother, well maybe him too in time if he wants it, will be healed," Lynette added.

"Once, I had calmed down, I also kissed him on the cheek and offered to do his front before we spent hours soaking up the sun, we would have probably been there until early evening had it not been for lunch," Amber chuckled.

"During lunch we made small talk as you already know and confirmed Jade had gone out to see friends and would be back for dinner. After lunch I was a little giddy and lead Darmon by the hand towards the back stairs to the cellar and games room, since it was something we discussed at the pool. Darmon stopped and backed away in a panic. It hurt my heart when I saw this. I pulled him into my embrace as I comforted him. I told him I wasn't going to do anything to harm or hurt him. I told him that I was just going to show him the games room and only promised a fun afternoon."

"I got the impression he thought this was still a trick of some sort to lure him away to be locked up again. He didn't resist and probably knew that if I was to lock him up it was just his fate to suffer. I showed him the cellar and then lead him towards the games room."

"You know what he did? He did the same as when grandma related her story, he confirmed he had permission to come and go from the games room. I told him he was silly for even asking and confirmed that nothing was restricted or off limits for him. I told him that if he was ever hungry he could ask the cook or one of the maids

and they would always find something for him to snack on. I told him if he ever felt like taking a nap then anywhere is okay, be it one of our beds, the couch or anywhere else."

"I told him that no one will ever touch or harm him in anyway in this house. I also admitted that while we didn't know him well for now, but we were hoping over time that would turn to joy and laughter. I asked if he would allow us all to heal together. I think he understood and smiled and I felt he understood that mother, my sister or me would take time to get to know him and he was okay with that. Grandma, he knows you love him unconditionally."

Amber chuckled, when she remembered something, "You know Darmon has a habit of just nodding when he is happy or acknowledging things and I told him while it was nice to see, we would be more happy to hear the joy in his voice. Gods, he tried hard to do that and I thought it was kinda cute."

"Anyway, he was in awe of the games room and what it held. I spent some time showing him the fun we could have and how to play the various different games. After having fun, we rested on the couch and watched a Disney movie together, don't ask me what it was, I was only paying attention to his hand in mine, how he would laugh or gasp as he gripped and let loose, my hand. After the movie, I got up and told Darmon dinner would be ready soon and we should go get ready."

"I told him that for that evening we should dress nicely as we didn't know what tomorrow would bring as I suspect his day was going to be busy. I took him to the room where we have dad's clothes stored. I helped pick out his clothes for that evening and invited him to my room. I had no ulterior motive, I swear. I advised that he should take a shower to wash off the pool and then come back to get changed. He just say 'Yes', and stripped off his trunks in my room. No hesitation at all then moved to the bathroom. I decided to strip myself knowing that Darmon would be taking a shower and selected my outfit for the evening. The towels were in the bathroom, so I couldn't cover myself."

"Not sure, if he has never seen a shower before or just couldn't figure out the shower in my room, so he calls me for help. Since, this has for a long time been just a female only household I didn't even consider it, but just walked into the bathroom naked. I suppose I should have know he was just like any other red blooded male and my nakedness had the usual effect. He got hard... oh my god, he is huge, it was a lot bigger than from where I saw it before when mom and grandma were washing him. I showed him how to turn on and off the shower. He stepped into the shower and seemed at a loss for what to do. I offered to shower with him and show him how to use the shampoo and body wash. He accepted and we spent the next 10 minutes washing ourselves."

"We took our towels and dried ourselves in the bedroom. His cock hadn't gone down and I told him that I would love to help him with his issue, but needed to confirm it with grandma and you, mom. I suppose it did go down after I took the sights away from him by getting dressed and he was then able to put on the boxers and trousers, just in time for the call to dinner. The rest is how it was from Jade's account."

Agatha, was stunned at what she heard from her oldest granddaughter but equally proud at the same time. "Thank you, Amber. I was right, you had the most interaction with Darmon. How are you feeling now after the days events?"

"Truth be told, I don't regret any of it. I don't feel I did anything wrong."

"You didn't, sweetie," Agatha confirmed. "This brings me to our next discussion. I've found a therapist that I feel could help him and have scheduled a time today to attend with him. The next part is a little complicated and delicate and everyone is free to decline, I don't think it will harm him in anyway, I hope."

Lynette and the girls had confused looks before Lynette asked, "Mom?"

Agatha sighed, "For starters, I was hoping that maybe each of you would like to take a turn sleeping besides him at night. I believe this will strength the bond between us and him."

"Sure, that seems fair, I suppose," Jade stated, which was acknowledged by her mother and sister.

"Thanks, the next part might be hard for you. I want him to experience love and this might lead to some sexual encounters. Now, you're all free to say no. My aim is to show him he is cared for and will always be part of us with an aim to him losing his virginity to one of us. I know this might be too much to ask of you, but I was hoping you Lynette could slowly seduce him and teach him how to be loved and how to love a female. If you're not okay with taking his virginity then maybe one of the girls could do it, and if everyone decides not to do it then I will do everything myself. My love for my grandson is absolute."

Lynette, Amber and Jade were shocked at what Agatha was requesting of them. "You don't have to decide now. I don't expect this to start, until several months down the line after he opens up more and is more comfortable around us. If you don't mind me asking Amber, Jade are you both still virgins?" the girls grandma straight up asked.

Both Amber and Jade had open mouths at what their grandmother just asked. It was Amber who recovered first, "Uhhh, grandma, I'm only 19 and had a few boyfriends that never lasted and never even gotten to the heavy petting stage. So Yes, I am a virgin."

"Umm, I never even dated yet, but I might have put things up inside my vagina, I believe my hymen is still intact, so I'm also a virgin," Jade said quietly ashamed to admit masturbating.

Agatha was smiling, but Lynette was in shock at all the revelations this morning. "My god mom, is my nephew going to cause this family to be destroyed then rebuilt?"

"Darling, this family is already fractured with previous family issues. I feel that Darmon is what we all need to strengthen and rebuild our family, whether that is with or without certain members. As I said you don't have to answer me now. Take

your time and see how your feeling take form after Darmon finds his way into your hearts."

"Grandma, I can answer you now," Amber said. "I for one know how I feel about him and what it would mean to this family, so count me in on everything. I hope my cousin can handle a little flirting and teasing."

"That is nice, sweetie, and thank you. Please don't torture the poor child with too much teasing. I don't want him to suffer, do you understand?" Agatha concluded from Amber retelling of events from yesterday, she already knew she would have been onboard. Agatha is just hoping that the others will change their minds, in time. Agatha was optimistic that they both would come around sooner rather than later or never.

"Sis, are you sure about this?" Jade asked

"Amber, honey, if you go down this path there is a chance that you can't come back from this. There will be no chance of regrets later. If you do this then you are committed to Darmon and Darmon alone, is that what you want?" Lynette asked to confirm if her daughter truly felt that way.

"Mom, grandma is right. Our family as a whole is already in shambles. Considering what happened to dad and what is happening with aunt Evelyn's family. I don't know how this will play out in the end, will I regret it? I don't know, but one thing I can be certain of is that I want to try something or anything to repair it. I understand that you feel that I haven't considered all possibilities, and you may be right. If it gives you some peace of mind then I am willing to wait until we all get to know Darmon better. Would that put you mind at ease, mother? I still intend to tease him, but maybe not as hard or as much as I initially intended."

"Honey. I am only looking out for your well being and for Darmon's peace of mind also. Darmon has a lot of trauma and pain that he has to get over and you throwing yourself at him might just confuse him," Lynette said being the voice of reason.

Darmon at this point entered in his boxers which stopped any further discussions. "Darmon, honey. Do you know your just in your underwear?" Lynette asked as he entered the dinning room.

"Uhhh, yeah... I cannot find the clothes I was wearing yesterday and didn't think wearing what I did to dinner yesterday was right also," Darmon said looking down shyly.

"Oh, my sweet child. I don't mind at all, even if you were naked," Agatha commented. "But it's not something that everyone can accept. Darmon, after breakfast I have scheduled an appointment to see someone and we'll also go clothes shopping so that you have a wardrobe full of your own clothes. While, breakfast gets ready, maybe your aunt can help you select something of her husbands to wear in the interim."

Lynette got up and lead Darmon to the same room where there was lots of men clothing. Once, they were both in the storage room, Lynette started to look through her husbands clothes, selected some causal pants and a polo shirt.

"Hmm, aunt Lynette, can I ask you something?"

"Sure, you can ask me anything. What seems to be troubling you, honey?"

"Uhhmmm! Every time, I have needed some clothes everyone brings me to this room. Are these uncle's clothes? I've not not meet him... He away on a trip or something? Why aren't uncles clothes in your room?"

Lynette was startled at the question and had a faraway expression. "Honey, your uncle passed away just over 2 years ago. He was involved in a hit-and-run car accident. It nearly destroyed this family. The girls dotted on their father and I lost a true friend. The girls and I couldn't bare to throw or donate his clothes and other

personal items, so we stored them here. I'm just glad that they have been useful at least."

Darmon could see his aunt was upset and pulled her into his embrace to give her support and gave her a kiss on the cheek, he felt that his aunt wasn't telling him everything. "Oh, uummm, did I hurt you or Jade seeing me wear uncle's things?"

"Oh no, honey. It surprised me at first, but what I felt was not hurt or anything directed at you. I just thought, that his items were in storage and would never been seen or used again. Then you came to dinner like he would have, it was more shocking than anything else. I'm sure that during the coming days or weeks, we both will learn more about each other."

"I hope so, auntie. I don't feel either of us are ready yet."

"You're probably right, honey. Anyway, get dressed and let's go have breakfast," Lynette prompted. Darmon got dressed and both returned to the dinning room. Amber and Jade looked at Darmon and smiled at him. Agatha, got up and kissed Darmon's forehead and had a smile ear to ear. Agatha did truly love her grandson despite the time that had separated them.

Once, breakfast was finished, the women all went to get ready for the day. Agatha returned first and sat besides her grandson on the couch in the living room. "My sweet child, the first part of today, would be to go clothes shopping. We need to get you your own wardrobe full of clothing. We can't continue to use Martin's things. In addition to this, the girls and I will help you get other material things, like a mobile phone, watch and other things you might like."

"We'll stop for some lunch whilst we are out and then the girls can go home if they want, but I have booked an appointment with a therapist that I will hope will help you get over the trauma that you have suffered. I know it might not be something that you will like, but I promise it will help in the long term. You might not want to do it as it may be recalling painful memories, I hope you would do it for your grandma. I'm sure it will help greatly and make me happy."

Darmon nodded and remembering what Amber asked him then added, "Okay."

Lynette and the girls arrived shortly after that, and were dressed in smart casual clothes with some make-up to enhance their already beautiful faces. Amber, was the one that got to Darmon first and when Darmon got up from the couch, she grabbed his arm so that the back of his arm was in her cleavage. "Oh, this is going to be so much fun," she giggled.

"Alice, can you have the driver ready to take us to the mall and then accompany us also?" Lynette asked one of the maids.

"Yes, of course madam," Alice responded and then left to get things moving.

With the number of people going, two SUV's were waiting on the front drive. Lynette took charge to divide who will go in which car. "Amber, Jade and Alice will use the second SUV. Mom, myself and Darmon will be in the first SUV."

"But, mom I wanted to be in the same car as Darmon," Amber said as she separated from her cousin to face her mother.

"You'll get plenty of time be with him later, I'm sure. Just listen to me for once," Lynette said as she looked at her daughter's pouting expression.

Everyone got into the SUV's assigned them and set off for the shopping mall.

In the main SUV, Darmon sat looking out of the window, whilst his grandma held his hand in hers. Meanwhile, in the other SUV. Amber and Jade were having a conversation.

"Sis, I know what grandma is asking of us and I'm on the fence about that. I just want to find out why you were so ready to accept it," Jade probed.

Amber looked over at Alice and wasn't sure if she knew of their female family only conversation this early morning. Alice just smiled and nodded. 'Of course, all the household staff would know and keep everything secret,' Amber thought. 'I wonder how they feel about this unusual situation. Do they think we're all weird or this is wrong?' Amber continued in her mind. Alice knew and didn't question it, for she and the rest of the staff had seen the joy and life return to their mistress when the young master arrived. She recalled the time when this family laughed and enjoyed life as they thought they had a plan to get the young master free. She witnessed the family life leave them when Master Martin died and with that the chance to get the young master.

"Jade, I don't know if this is right or wrong. Actually, I would like to think this is right even when it would appear to all on the outside to be wrong. You remember, the joy everyone felt when dad, found a solution to get Darmon. You also remember, how after dad's passing, how things went. How mom lost a big part of the our company and how uncle Jacob backed out on a deal to give us Darmon," Amber continues to justify her reasoning.

"For months, how we all felt. How each night, we would all of us cry ourselves to sleep. Grandma had to be hospitalized for a month. It wasn't just the loss of a son-in-law, it was doubly painful since she had lost any chance of getting our cousin. If that plan had worked, we would have had a brother as I'm sure mom would have adopted him," Amber continued.

Amber took her sister's hands in her, "Darmon has only been with us a couple of nights, and you've seen mom and grandma cry, only this time not in pain but joy.

Well, I suppose some of those tears were due to some painful memories. What I mean to say is that I've not seen grandma this happy, ever!"

Amber turned to look directly at her sister, "Before, you say anything, yes, I know grandma was happy before dad died, but there was always something missing. I didn't understand what it was, until Darmon was found and joined us. Now I do. If mom or you don't feel you can do this then I am sure both grandma and I will love Darmon, just as grandma wishes, as he should be. I don't think I will regret my decision, correction, I know I will not. I honestly believe that Darmon could bring this whole family back together again, and I mean the whole family, aunt Evelyn, Elizabeth and Sara also. I'm doing this for our family, Jade."

Jade saw the determination in her sister's eyes and jokingly said, "The whole family, including uncle Jacob...?" This caused Amber to playfully punch her sister's arm. "Well, maybe not everyone. I'm pretty sure mom would kill her brother than have him anywhere near us," Amber chuckled as Jade in mock pain was holding her arm.

"Regardless, of what mom and you decide and I hope you and mom do come onboard, I still believe this family is on the way to mending broken hearts and our broken family."

Amber thought some more and then laughed, "Just imagine, if mom doesn't come onboard and grandma doesn't take his virginity, then maybe we could lose it together. My god, have you seen the size of his cock, I swear up close it's this big." Amber spread the palms of both hands at about 1 foot apart. This brought a gasp from Jade and a small giggle from Alice.

20 minutes later they arrive at the shopping mall. The first hour and a bit was spent on getting Darmon a full wardrobe. This was all new to him and while nervous he would smile and laugh at his cousins attempt at giving him weird and mismatched styles. Darmon was asked to try on various different clothes with his grandma and aunt judging which looked good on him. In addition to everyday wear clothing, Darmon got causal, smart causal and formal clothes, including PJ's, underwear and various foot wear. All items, were arranged to be delivered later that day.

Next, Amber dragged Darmon away so that he could help her pick out new ranges for herself. Jade decided to tag along. Amber's giggles and laughter was infectious and had both Darmon and Jade laughing with her. Amber would ask Darmon what he thought of this or that and even teased him by taking him to the lingerie section asking if this would look on her, mom, Jade or even grandma. Darmon didn't understand what was happening but his face would get hot and this would only make Amber laugh more. In the end Amber picked out lots of clothes to try on.

Amber asked the saleswoman, where the changing rooms were and asked if there was a seating area for her boyfriend to sit, so she could get his opinion. Darmon was confused when his cousin referred to him as her boyfriend but remained silent. Amber was given the general direction and both Darmon and Jade accompanied her. Amber got Darmon to sit and then selected a cubicle where she left a small gap in the curtain, so that she can watch Darmon via the mirror to see if he would spy on her. It didn't take long before she knew Darmon was looking. Jade who was seated next to him could also see that her sister was teasing him and remained silent to see his reaction.

Amber removed all her clothing and would stare at herself in the mirror, whilst keeping an eye on Darmon via the mirror. Amber would raise each of her breasts and run her hand over her hard nipples and even open her legs slightly to examine her pussy. Darmon of course got hard and he didn't know what to do. Jade saw his pants tent and got wet herself. Amber was having a great time teasing her cousin. For the next 30 minutes Amber tried on various items with Jade giving feedback. To tease Jade a little she even asked Darmon to pose with her on some, where she would clearly point his erect tented pants towards her sister, all this teasing was making her very wet also. Darmon was sure he heard moans from both his cousins. He was too naive to fully understand what that meant.

In the end, Amber, also brought a selection of clothes and various new lingerie sets. These were also arranged to be delivered for later that day. "Jade, you not getting anything new? I'm sure our cousin would love to see you model them," Amber asked.

"Not today, sis. Today was more to get out of the house for me. I brought some new things recently," Jade replied fully knowing her sister was trying to entice her to also tease their cousin. Jade actually took pity on her cousin and would walk in front of him, with a bag in hand hiding her cousin's erection, until he returned to a flaccid state. Amber wouldn't make it easy since she would be pressing her breasts against her cousin, all innocently.

When they were all back together, at the restaurant for lunch the girls asked if their mother and grandmother brought anything new.

"Yes, sweetie, both your mother and I did. I feel like a new woman and thought to get something that suited my new mood. You should have seen the items your mother got," Agatha chuckled. This brought giggles from both girls and put a scowl on Lynette's face as her mother revealed this.

"Darmon, honey. My mother and daughters are just having fun and trying to embarrass me. Order whatever you want and if you want help understanding what something is then please ask," Lynette said with red tinted cheeks.

In the end, Darmon picked out a burger, fries and a soda. Lynette picked out a grilled chicken salad. Agatha a club sandwich and the girls opted to follow their cousin's lead and pick out burgers for themselves. Darmon never had a burger before and was looking for a knife and fork as he was asked to when eating food at home. He looked over at his cousins and found they were just picking up with their hands and taking bites. Darmon just shrugged his shoulders and did the same. It was one of the best meals that Darmon had ever eaten, his moans and groans of pleasure brought giggles from everyone.

"Honey, if you want more then please don't hesitate to order more. Remember, after that first night with us, I told you that food would never be taken or denied you ever again. So eat until you're full," Lynette said.

Darmon was taking a long pull from his soda and responded, "I'm full aunt Lynette. That was the best food ever. Umm..., well... can I get another soda, please?" Lynette smiled and another soda was ordered.

After lunch finished, Lynette went to the counter to pay, this caused Darmon to question what was going on, "Oh... What is auntie doing?"

"Mom, is going to pay for our lunch," Jade said.

Darmon had a confused look, "Does that mean grandma and auntie have to pay the cook and maids for each meal we have at home?" Both Amber and Jade actually laughed out loud, which only confused Darmon more.

"My sweet child, food at home is brought for us all to eat at home. It is prepared by the cook and served by the maids. Any food that is not from home would need to be paid for. You aunt is just going up to pay for our lunch," Agatha confirmed. Darmon somewhat understood, but was confused about what should or shouldn't be paid for. Darmon reasoned that as he got more settled in then things would make more sense.

With lunch finished, Agatha brought her grandson a new mobile, a new smart watch and a small linked chain to go around his neck. "My sweet child, it may be difficult to learn the features of the mobile, could you ask Amber or Jade to help teach you?" Agatha asked her grandson, who nodded.

Mid afternoon, Agatha addressed the girls. "Sweeties, the next stop if for me to take Darmon to see the therapist. Please take one of the SUV's and return home. We will be there before dinner."

Lynette and the girls looked concerned but said their goodbyes, with Lynette and Jade kissing Darmon on the cheeks and Amber giving him a quick kiss full on the lips. Agatha looked at this exchange and smile happily.

The group separated and Agatha went with her grandson to the therapy session.

30 minutes later, Darmon and Agatha were waiting in the therapist's waiting room. Both Darmon and Agatha were nervous. 5 minutes after arriving they were called in.

"Darmon, my name is Dr Nolan." Dr Nolan, was a woman in her mid 40's. She had short black hair and was wearing glasses. She was a little plump and homely looking. Darmon remained silent.

"Your grandmother asked for this meeting between us and asked if she would be permitted to stay by your side during this initial consultation. Are you happy with this?" Dr Nolan asked and Darmon just nodded.

"Good, Good. Please sit down and we'll get started."

Darmon and Agatha both sat down on the couch and Dr Nolan sat in an armchair facing them, "Let's ask you the most basic of questions. What brings you here today?"

Darmon didn't understand the question and looked at his grandmother then back at Dr. Nolan, "Grandma!"

"No, what I mean is do you know why you're here today?"

Darmon shook his head, he really didn't know, "No, grandma thought it might help and told me it would make her happy if I did."

"I see, we'll come back to that one at a later time. Can you tell me more about your family?"

Darmon smiled when asked that and said, "My grandma, aunt Lynette and Amber and Jade are lovely, they don't shout at me, beat me up or even lock me away. I like my family."

"I see, what about your father, mother and do you have any siblings?"

Darmon's face clouded at the mention of them and looked at his grandmother, "Grandma, I don't like this. Can we go home please?"

Dr. Nolan tried to calm her patient down, "Sorry, Darmon for asking that. We'll park that for now and can I ask you 'How has your experience and life been over the last few days?'."

Darmon's expression changed and he joyfully went on to explain how happy he was, but still had some fears this would all change because he did or didn't do something and feared he would make a mistake and be punished, this brought a sob from Agatha.

There followed a few more questions that tried to get Darmon to open up more until the session came to a close. "Darmon, I would love to see you again, if you're willing. Your grandmother can accompany you for each visit if you're comfortable with that."

"Sure, okay but only if grandma comes also."

As promised the family celebrated Darmon's birthday a little later than it should have been but everyone had a great time. Everyone sang the birthday song and

gave him small gifts and a lot of teasing from Amber. Since, everyone else was laughing and giggling, Darmon just let whatever he didn't understand wash over him.

What followed over the next month, were weekly meetings with the therapist, where eventually Darmon opened up more about his family. The end take away from that was the therapist learned that he resented his immediate family especially his father, mother and oldest sibling Elizabeth. Sara was an exception and he didn't resent her like the others on account of her never really getting him into trouble like Elizabeth did. He hated his mother for not being there for him and not shielding him from his father.

Over the following month, the therapist, got Darmon to change his views at least on his mother, so that he saw her just as much as a victim as he was. She couldn't change his views on his eldest sibling, Elizabeth, and this was going to be something that would heal overtime. As for Sara, he learned it was her that kept his grandmother informed and also who help nurse him alongside his mother after a severe beating by his father.

During this time, the flirting and teasing continued by Amber, with Jade sometimes doing the same. Lynette's view also changed somewhat, but still wasn't a hundred percent committed to open flirting or teasing.

In secret, Agatha was in communication with Sara, she kept Sara abreast of new developments, sending pictures and texts, which in turn were shared with her mother and sister. Agatha told Sara how Darmon's views on her and her mother were changing, but he totally had issues with Elizabeth. This hurt Elizabeth a lot and she understood why her brother hated her. Agatha told her that she feels that Darmon's view would change when he understood why she did it.

While Amber really wanted to take her relationship with Darmon to the next level, she was told to not do that yet as somethings were going to happen after a family meeting that could make Darmon bottle everything up again and hurt any relationship he may form. Amber wasn't happy about this and surprisingly, Lynette and Jade weren't happy at this decision either.

As requested, Darmon got comfortable using the bed due in part to, most nights he would have someone different in rotation sleeping alongside him. Many a morning one of the women would wake up alongside him, with him being the big spoon and his erection poking them. None of the women said or did anything, although, Agatha and Amber would sometimes, rub against him. Darmon was just happy that each wanted to give him affection.

So a family meeting was called about 5 months after Darmon arrived. They were all seated at the dinning room table in their night wear.

"I've called this meeting with a view to transparency, I have learned a lot from attending the therapy sessions with Darmon. So, thought that we can all share in the healing process," Agatha said to start the meeting.

"Darmon, my sweet child. From the time, your father forbade me to see you and your sisters, I have been trying to find some way to get you out from the under the heel of your father. Every thing we did, was turned upside down by your father. It wasn't until about 3 years ago that your uncle came to me with a possible solution. For you to understand this better, I need to tell you that the family owns a international company that deals in buying failing business and then turning them around to add to the companies portfolio."

Agatha paused before continuing, "Your father and uncle owned the majority of the company, the company was, originally, owned by me and your grandfather. Since, your father was my son he was given twenty five percent of the company. Your aunt

meet your uncle in her collage days and found her match, they got married. Your grandfather then gave up twenty percent of the company to Martin as a wedding gift. Both Jacob and Martin were. I retained fifteen percent of the company with the rest divided among family members and some floated on the public market."

"Your uncle came to me to propose, that if your father was willing he will give up his twenty percent of the company with the promise that he hand you over to be adopted by him and your aunt. This deal would make your father the majority owner of the company."

Darmon looked over at his aunt and saw a look on her face that he didn't understand. Agatha continued the tale, "Your uncle drafted a contract where he would sign over his shares to your father with the condition that you be given to him to be adopted. They had been long time friends and business partners also. Your uncle trusted your father when he confirmed that he can come over to the house in a few days time, alone, to pick you up and sign the release paperwork granting adoption rights to your uncle."

"That day when your uncle came to us, to tell us that you would be with us soon to be a son and brother. You have no idea how happy I, your uncle and aunt were. When we told the girls they were getting a new brother, they thought their mom was pregnant at first before we told them about you."

"A few days later, as your uncle went alone to get you he was run off the road by another car. The police suspect it was a hit and run by a drunk driver. Your uncle died at the scene. When news of his death reached us we were devastated. It was weeks later that I and your aunt meet your father. We knew that even in our grief we would still get you as per the agreement. Your father denied any agreement was in place and that your uncle surrender his shares so that he could spend more time with family."

"We can't prove it, but we suspect that your father had something to do with your uncle's death. This fractured the family further. Your aunt hates her brother for everything he has done to our family."

Darmon, noticed that Amber and Jade were hugging their mother, they were all comforting each other. Darmon, got up and put his arm around his aunt and cousins, feeling like this was somehow his fault. Lynette looked at her nephew and saw his expression, "Oh, honey, this isn't your fault. It's my brother's fault, he wasn't always like this. After you were born, he turned bitter and evil."

Darmon had tears in his eyes, "How is this not my fault then... my birth caused this."

Lynette and the girls were clearly crying, as Lynette told him, "*sob* Your birth was a miracle and something the family needed. My brother would have done something else which could have lead to the same conclusion. Your father only wanted the power to rule over others."

Agatha let them weep for a little bit, when they calmed down continued, "We had lost a loving husband, father and son, equally we lost the chance to free you, my sweet child. Any and all tries to free you were stopped by your father. Our last effort was to wait for you to turn 18, where you would be classified as an adult and could no longer be controlled by your parents, but those plans were also ruined when you escaped. It had taken a lot of money and time to locate you and bring you home. Now, that you're here, I would have paid a hundred times what I already paid to have you with us."

Darmon was stunned, "Aunt Lynette, is this what you didn't tell me when I asked about uncle? I always sensed that you didn't tell me everything." Lynette nodded.

Darmon was in awe, "Wow, I can now see what it meant to get me here and why everyone is affectionate towards me. I can never replace uncle Martin, but I hope you will accept my affection instead. I'm glad that none of you resent me what happened."

Both Amber and Jade said in sync, "Never!"

Darmon resolved that since they had already told him about uncle Martin it only fitting that he reveal his trauma, "Thank you for telling me about this and I think I want to also tell you my own story. I feel it pales in comparison to what happened to uncle."

"I was around 8 or 9 years old when, grandma suddenly stopped coming over. I thought I had done something to make her go away. It was also around this time that I noticed the hatred my father had for me. That is not to say he didn't hate me before, I'm not sure but I felt he had always hated me. Every time, I would get close to mom, I would be punished. I didn't understand, why at the time. It got to the point that mom would avoid me, when my father was around."

"You know being ignored hurts a lot more than getting beatings. I tried to have fun with my sisters and initially it was okay. Both Elizabeth and Sara would play games with me and I enjoyed those times, until dad noticed and then I would get a beating."

"This started to happen regularly, my father would always beat me after I had played with my sisters. It got to the point that I started to avoid my sisters, so that I wouldn't be beat. On the rare times, I did manage to get some affection from mom, Elizabeth would catch us and report me to our father, which resulted in a beating with father belt."

"I noticed that every time Elizabeth would report me to our father, she would be praised and be granted gifts from our father. Sara would on occasion joins in after Elizabeth reported me to get some sort of praise also. Many a night I went to bed hungry. By the time I turned 9 years old, most of my meals were from left overs thrown into the garbage bin. Many a night I slept cold and hungry on the basement floor."

"It was around this time, that I found food on a plate left outside one of the bedrooms most nights. I was afraid it was someones food and would pick at it to make it look like someone hadn't touched it. Initially, a blanket would also be near the food, I left that well alone as a missing blanket wouldn't go unnoticed as much as some food gone missing. No one reported anything and I reasoned that I had been lucky. A

week or two later, I found the blanket in the basement. I once again didn't touch it for fear that it was just dropped her as part of laundry. When the blanket hadn't moved or been taken away, I used it one night when it was very cold. I was thankful again that I didn't suddenly receive a beating."

"For the following several years, I preferred to be ignored, that is not to say that I didn't get beatings for no apparent reasons. Sometime, I would get beat and Elizabeth would have something new. I would still have to hunt for food and I was thankful for someone always leaving something unfinished for me to eat. After my 12th birthday, I hated to be ignored and would act up myself. I started to look forward to the beatings and would grin or laugh as I suffered them. This pattern continued until I was around 15 years old, whenever I couldn't stand being ignored, I would act up and suffer beatings. It made me come to enjoy them, not because of the pain but more so it meant that I was seen."

Darmon, recalled an event shortly after that when his father came to beat him looking very smug, "Oh damn. I remember a time shortly after that, when my father came to beat me with a look of happiness and laughing in glee as I suffered. I think this might be around the same time as what happened to uncle. I suffered for the next 2 and bit years where my father would enjoy beating me, I had no idea at the time, why. A few months before my 18th birthday, I couldn't stand being ignored so I acted up on purpose."

Darmon winced at the next memory which was noticed by all listening, "That day, it wasn't just the belt that my father beat me with. My defiance, got him angry enough to use a fire stoker to beat me with. I would have died that day, if it wasn't for someone or someones bodies covering me. I spent the next month in the basement in pain, with a fever and covered in cuts and bruises. I think I was in and out of consciousness, but I do have vague memories of one or two people tending to my wounds and trying to feed me drink or solids."

"I made a vow to myself that once I got well enough, I would get out of there. I feared my father would have killed me before my 18th birthday. The few months after that were hard and I thought on many occasion that I would end up another nameless

person found in a ditch. It wasn't until grandma and auntie found me that I now stand before you. Loved and wanted. I have spared you the gory details on purpose."

As Darmon concluded his story, his aunt and cousins were weeping openly again. Darmon looked down at his feet, "With what you have told me about uncle... Hmmm... I wonder, would it have been better my father killed me before what happened to uncle. Other than grandma none of you knew me... your family would still be whole."

Lynette was shocked at what her nephew just said and she beat Amber to pull Darmon in her embrace, whilst sobbing, "Silly, man... *sob* Your uncle would have gladly sacrificed himself if it meant getting a son like you. *sob*." Amber and Jade equally came to hug their cousin crying.

Helen and Alice were within ear shot of this meeting, to anticipate the mistress' and madams' needs. Both of their faces had streak marks from tears on the their cheeks. They immediately brought in refreshments as they waited for the family to calm down.

Once, everyone had taken some refreshments, Agatha concluded the meeting with, "Thank you, my beautiful family for being open and recounting each other's story. I hope this makes everything clear and leads towards some decisions to be made." Agatha looked at Lynette and the girls, before continuing, "Darmon, my sweet child. I hope you can keep an open mind and understanding since tomorrow some guests are coming to stay with us."

Darmon looked at his grandma and asked, "Who?"

Agatha didn't know how to answer that and simply responded, "I don't like to keep secrets from you, but would you allow his old lady just this one time. Can you wait until tomorrow?"

Darmon had a feeling in the pit of his stomach that something big was going to happen tomorrow, "Sure, grandma. Old lady, really? You're not old but you got the lady part right, a beautiful lady." This brought blushes to all the females present, including the maids.

It was Amber who broke into laughter, "Darmon, you silver tongued charmer."

They had dinner and Darmon was wondering if everyone, bar himself, knew of the guests coming tomorrow. This was going to be of those rare nights when he slept alone.

Everyone awoke, got ready and had breakfast. It was just before lunch, that an SUV pulled up outside the house. Darmon, Amber and Jade were outside enjoying the gardens with both girls pressed against their cousin's sides. They were in bikinis that showed off their sexy bodies. Darmon had on some nice fitting trunks. It was a nice day and they thought it would be nice to take a dip this afternoon.

Back at the house, Evelyn, Elizabeth and Sara entered the living room. Agatha and Lynette were there to greet them. "Evelyn, darling. How are you? Elizabeth and Sara, sweeties, you both look beautiful just like your mother," Agatha opened.

Everyone was clearly nervous, "Mom, does he know we are here or coming?" Evelyn asked.

Agatha shook her head, "No, darling. If he had known and stopped me, then I would have listened to my grandson and this meeting might never have happened. He is going to be shocked for sure. I asked him to keep an open mind at dinner yesterday."

"Where is my brother, grandma. I really want to see him," Sara asked. Elizabeth stayed silent and very very nervous.

"Honey, he is in the garden with your cousins. Lunch will be served shortly and we can all meet each other then. Can you please be patient for a bit?" Lynette asked. The girls nodded, but Evelyn had her dress clenched in both hands, she didn't know how things were going to go and it was this that had her almost ready to flee.

The maids, called Darmon and the girls to lunch. Darmon laughing at some joke or story that either Amber or Jade had said, hadn't noticed the new guests. Both Amber and Jade did notice and this made them pause. Darmon looked up and saw his mother and sisters next to his grandma and aunt, this caused him to stop dead in his tracks.

Evelyn saw her son and made to move towards him. Darmon used Amber as a shield and shouted "Stop", before panicking and running past his cousins to his room. Evelyn dropped to her knees, with Elizabeth and Sara coming up to comfort their mother. Evelyn buried her head into her hands and cried loudly.

Agatha looked on annoyed and upset but fully understanding her grandson's reaction.

"Mom?" Amber loudly spoke, she couldn't believe her grandma and mother had done this, how this could mean a big set back in her cousin's recovery. "I can't believe you allowed this. I'm going up to make sure he's okay," Amber started to leave but was stopped.

"Amber, honey. Please don't. I think it should be mom that goes," Lynette sighed. She had discussed this with her mother and knew it was going to be hard on everyone. Amber looked over at her grandma, pleaded with her eyes to make it right.

Agatha sighed again and went over to Amber, she put her hand on Amber's arm and looking up at her face, "Don't worry, sweetie. Every thing will fine." Agatha then moved past her granddaughter towards her grandson's bedroom.

Darmon didn't know what to do, he was in a panic. His thoughts were coming at him fast and relentlessly:

'They found me and wanted to drag me back.'

'They want to kill me.'

'Does grandma not really love me?'

'Was the joy I've felt a lie?'

Darmon curled up in a corner and wept. He resolved that he would have to run again. His thoughts continued:

'I can't go back.'

'I don't want to die.'

'Do Amber and Jade know and don't want me here anymore?'

'Was this punishment for uncle's death?'

There was a light knock on his bedroom door. Darmon froze and looked for a way out. Darmon saw the window leading to the gardens, he had the window open and had one leg out of the window when the door opened.

Agatha saw what was about to happen and cried, "STOP", before she collapsed to the floor. Darmon saw his grandma fall to the floor, his mind raced, 'This is my chance to escape while they can't stop me,' and the flip side of these thoughts was, 'What if she is hurt. She showed you love and affection, so why do that if she didn't want you.'

Darmon remember the times when she would come visit him, give him love and affection and sweets to eat. He remembered her crying many time since they found him. His concern overrode his escape instinct and he reasoned that he could always run later, unless they locked him up.

Darmon went over to check on his grandma. He checked she was breathing and gently touched her forehead and face. Agatha opened her eyes which caused Darmon to back away looking at the window again. "Oh my sweet child. Do you think I would harm you or send you back to your father? I promised you when you got here that I wouldn't do anything like that. Don't leave me again, please I beg you don't..."

Darmon was in a panic and with a shaking voice, "I don't want to go back... *sob* I don't want to die."

Unknown to both, Evelyn had also gone after her son to mend bridges and saw the open door. Evelyn had stopped outside to the side of the door listening. She had heard what her mother-in-law had said and how her son had responded. Evelyn gasped and ran back to the living room and threw herself on the couch and cried, her mind raced also with thoughts of guilt and what she should have done to protect her son. The rest of the females in the living room tried to comfort Evelyn as best they could.

Back in Darmon's bedroom, his grandmother got up and Darmon helped her to sit on his bed. "My sweet child, what would give you the idea that I was sending you back?"

Darmon shrugged his shoulders, "Mom and my sisters... they've come to take me back..."

"No my sweet child. Your mother and sisters are coming to live here. They came to see you and to be near you, they have left your father. When I saw you about to leave me again, it broke my heart..."

Agatha went silent to see if her grandson would comment to either confirm or deny what he was about to do, but he remained silent which confirmed in her heart that he was going to run. "Do you trust me, my sweet child?"

Darmon nodded as Agatha continued, "Then give your mother a chance to explain things... Would you do this for me?"

Darmon just nodded before responded, "Okay, but can't promise anything..."

"Will you help me back so that we can all enjoy lunch together?" Agatha asked. Darmon nodded again, got up and helped his grandma back to the dinning room.

Lunch was awkward for everyone, Amber and Jade sat either side of Darmon acting as shields and glaring at their grandma and mother. Evelyn had puffy eyes from the crying she had done, and Darmon's sisters didn't look any better. Darmon's mother and sisters would glance over at him every so often and this put him on edge. Agatha and Lynette tried to keep the conversation going asking what the girls were up to and general small talk. After lunch, Darmon went to his room to rest, with the female cousins getting to know each other. The mature group sat in the living room quietly chatting.

Darmon remained in his room until dinner. He dressed for dinner and sat at the head of the table as he had been doing for awhile now. Darmon's mother and sisters also dressed up for dinner, not exactly formal, but still in nice dresses and makeup applied. Darmon's had to admit that his mother and sister's looked beautiful. Amber and Jade, as they did for lunch were his shields at dinner also. After dinner the girls tried to get Darmon to play a card game with them. He relented eventually, but wouldn't even look at Elizabeth and would at least smile at Sara.

Eventually, it was time for bed and Darmon went off to brush his teeth and wash before bed. He was just about to get into bed when there was a knock at his door. "Yes, come in," Darmon answered. He didn't know who it would be as his grandmother, aunt and cousins never needed to knock. He was stunned when he saw his mother in a dressing gown.

"Darmon, can I come in to talk, please?" his mother asked.

Darmon's instant reactions was to say, 'No', but remembered his grandmother asking to give his mother a chance, so responded with, "Okay."

Evelyn came in and closed the door behind her the asked for permission, "Darling, can I sit on your bed as we talk?" Darmon nodded but kept some distance between them.

"I know you probably hate me and your sisters, and I understand why. I should have done more to help you....," Evelyn said in a quiet subdued voice.

Evelyn was interrupted by Darmon asking, "Then why didn't you... I suffered because of you and my sisters."

Evelyn moved towards her son, but he backed away quickly and she just sighed. "I know, honey. I tried to, initially, protect you and this only resulted in your father

taking it out on you more. I thought that if I distanced myself from you then you might be saved some pain."

Evelyn sighed again, "With hindsight, I know this wasn't the right way. I should have fought for you more. I now believe your father would still have found other situations to beat you. Sweetheart, will you let me hold you in my arms at least once. If you want me to leave and want nothing to do with me afterwards I will listen even if it breaks my heart."

Darmon was about to say, 'No', but decided to grant her this one request and nodded in acceptance. Evelyn moved carefully towards her son and opening her arms brought him into her embrace. Darmon felt his mother sobbing and felt tears on his skin. Strange as it may seem Darmon actually found some comfort in his mother's loving embrace.

"I understand from your grandmother that the females in this household do on occasion sleep in the same bed as you. Would you also allow this, my son?"

Darmon, was wondering how open his grandma and the other women were if they were revealing things like this. "Okay, I will let you know how I feel about this in the morning."

Evelyn smiled, got up from the bed and took off her dressing gown. Evelyn was dressed in a light blue and very thin nightie with thong panties and no bra. Evelyn got into bed and opened the covers, then opened her arms for her son to join her. Evelyn cradled her son's face against her right breast with a contented sigh.

The next morning, Darmon awoke still embraced by his mother, who was looking down at her son with love. When her son started to stir she said, "Good morning, love. I hope you slept well. I know I did."

"Yeah, errr, good morning mom." Evelyn hearing her son call her mom, brought about a sense of relief knowing that the rebuilding of their relationship was underway.

"Shall we, get up. I think breakfast should be ready soon," Evelyn asked as she got up reluctantly and held out her hand to her son as they left, she didn't bother to put her dressing gown on either. Darmon on the other hand was thankful that even though he had an erection, his mother didn't embarrass him over it. Darmon always had erections in the morning and none of the women seemed to mind.

Evelyn waited for a short while to let her son deflate before linking her arm with her sons and held his hand in hers as they entered the dinning room. Everyone was already seated and looked up in shock when they saw Evelyn nearly naked, clinging to her son. Amber instantly felt some jealousy, but pushed it down. Breakfast that day was different as Evelyn wouldn't budge from her place besides her son with a big smile on her face. Agatha and Lynette smiled in return. Darmon didn't know what to do or how to react and wore a confused expression most of breakfast.

Darmon and the girls decided to spend time around the pool and the female cousins were bonding as if they weren't ever separated. Interactions between Darmon, Amber and Jade was joking and playful, pretty much as per normal since he arrived. Of his sisters, Darmon was cordial with Sara, but point blankly refused any interaction with Elizabeth. Sara would notice this and every so often lay her hand on her sister's arm to comfort her.

Elizabeth couldn't really blame her brother for this, she had been a lousy sister. In her defense this all started at around the age 7 years old for her and 5 years old for her brother. She had seen how her father treated her brother and didn't want to suffer the same thing. So when she realized that her father would praise her and give her gifts she turned a blind eye to her brothers suffering. Sara who was only 11 months older than Darmon, saw how her father treated her brother and didn't like it one bit. Sara would only join in when calling her brother nasty names for the same fears that her sister had.

The older women were also bonding again after their separation with most of the conversations centered around Darmon. Agatha was happy that her daughter-in-law managed to convince her grandson to, somewhat, try to make amends.

Lunch and dinner went well, with different women wanted to be next to Darmon. At lunch it was Agatha and Lynette and at dinner it was Amber with Jade. Another fun evening was had before everyone got ready for bed.

Darmon once again was about to get into bed when there was a knock on his door again. Darmon, again offered whoever it was entry to his room. When his sister Elizabeth entered, he froze and before he could tell her to, 'fuck off', she asked her brother, "Darmon, I know you hate me, but will you at least let me try to explain?"

Darmon was upset and shouted, "WHY? SO YOU CAN MAKE UP MORE LIES ABOUT ME? WELL GOOD LUCK WITH THAT GRANDMA AND AUNT LYNETTE WOULDN'T BELIEVE A WORD OF IT. GET THE FUCK OUT OF HERE!"

Darmon's raised voice had brought a number of his relatives towards his room, including Sara. They all saw Elizabeth run out of the room, fall to the ground outside his room, as Darmon slammed the door shut. Darmon, through the door heard Elizabeth wail and cry. Sara went to her sister and helped her up and lead her away as Elizabeth was mumbling, "He.. He.. Hates me, sis." That night, Elizabeth's mother comforted her daughter as she cried herself to sleep.

Darmon couldn't sleep and as much as he tried it, he just couldn't shut off her mind. So decided to go out the the back garden and sit on one of the loungers to think.

Sara couldn't sleep either, and was also just wandering around the house to tire herself out, in the hopes she would be able to sleep soon. As it would turn out her wanders also brought her to the pool where she spotted her brother. She walked over to him which made him jump when Sara cleared her throat.

"Darmon, can't sleep, huh? Me neither. Do you mind if I sit here and maybe we can talk?" Sara asked her brother. Darmon nodded. After Sara sat down, Darmon looked over at his sister, but nothing was said for several minutes.

"You should give her a chance you know. I know that we all wronged you, to one degree or another, more so our sister," Sara said and then paused giving her brother a chance to say something.

Darmon looked away and stared up at the night sky, but remained silent. Sara sighed then continued, "She's changed you know, and even stood up to dad after you left. With you not available, dad turned his attention to mom. Look I'm not asking you to forgive her, but just let her explain things. I know it might be too much to ask yet, still it's something that she needs to do to get past her own actions or maybe inaction's. I think it will be good for both of you."

Darmon signed, "I'll listen, I suppose I can at least give her that, but I will not promise anything..."

There was another lengthy pause, whilst both were contemplating things. Sara eventually broke the silence, "You know, when we were both 5 years old. I had to leave my room to use the bathroom and saw you in the kitchen going through the garbage bin to find food. At the time mom wasn't aware that dad hadn't even bothered to feed you. Mom didn't know until, I told her, later. At the time, I was going to say something but stopped, something inside told me to not draw attention to this."

Sara once again paused and looked over at her brother to see his reaction. Darmon sighed, "Yeah, many a night I went to sleep cold and hungry. I still don't know why I was targeted and treated that way."

"Following that, a day or two later, I sneaked down to see how you were doing in the basement. I saw you shivering, sleeping on the cold hard concrete floor. I told mom about this also, and she helped me put a plate of food most nights outside my bedroom and a blanket. I was always surprised that you would never eat all the food and even made it look like it was untouched. You never took the blanket even though I knew you were cold at night."

Darmon sat up and looked over at Sara with surprise clearly showing in his expression, "I always thought, it was someone's food and they were going to go back to it later and if I ate it I would be punished. At least with the food I could make it less likely to be discovered, when I ate it, but the blanket was something else. I knew if I took it then someone would have noticed I had taken it and I would be punished."

Sara chuckled, "Yeah, you have no idea how angry I got when you didn't take it. I told mom and she suggested that I drop it near your sleeping location in the basement. Every night after that, I would sneak down to see if you were using it. It nearly took you a week before you did use it. If you hadn't used it after that day, I was ready to tell you off for not using it. Mom would help me hide any evidence of our helping feed you. Luckily, Elizabeth didn't rat us out even if she saw or knew what we were doing."

"It was me or mom that would tend to your wounds, and leave you food in the basement after that vicious beating. Both mom and I did what we could to help you, without drawing dad's attention. Dad of course knew and forbade us from helping you after a few weeks. The last beating you received was by far the worst ever. I think dad would have killed you that day. It was mom who threw herself over your body and even took a blow meant for you, before I did the same. Dad, even in his anger fueled rage, stopped. Both mom and I helped you down to the basement, treating your wounds and nursed you as best we could. We couldn't exactly call the doctors or anything."

"When you ran away, dad in his rage went after mom thinking she did something and struck her hard. He would have done a lot more had it not been for me and to my surprise Elizabeth who moved between our parents. That is when Elizabeth changed, totally. Elizabeth had been having her own crisis of morality and never knew how much her brother was suffering. Mom would stop all interactions with dad after that. Every attempt at dad forcing her would be stopped by one or more of his daughters. She even started to sleep in each of our beds with the door locked at night, sometimes, all three of us would sleep in the same bed."

"You know, I have been in contact with grandma for awhile now. I was keeping her abreast of all developments, and that is how she learned of your escape, from me. I in turn learned that you were found. I told mom and Elizabeth, and we all cried with joy. I pleaded with grandma to let us see you, but she wouldn't allow it, she always claimed it was too soon and you needed to feel comfortable first. We learned you were in therapy and were coming to terms with some of it."

"Grandma and auntie, helped us escape and come here. We knew this was going to be a struggle for everyone. So that kinda concludes my side of the story."

Sara also sat up and looked over at her brother. Darmon was shocked and said, "Wow, the drama in this family."

Sara laughed, "I know right. Well, do you think it time to get some sleep now, little brother."

"Yeah, I suppose," Darmom replied.

"Hey, little brother. I heard of this new tradition, where someone is encouraged to sleep with you. I don't suppose you will allow me that honor this night? I think Elizabeth was hoping for that but someone shot her down."

It was Darmon who chuckled this time and said, "Sure."

That night Sara was the little spoon with her brother's arm around her stomach.

Mid morning, Darmon and Sara were still asleep, getting to bed late. There was a light knock on the door and when there was no answer the person let themselves in.

Evelyn saw her children sleeping with Sara being the little spoon. She was overcome with a sense of love and affection towards her babies. Evelyn walked over to the bed and just looked down at them. She was a little sad that it was Sara in Elizabeth's place, but she understood why her son did what he did, it still pained her to know that this broken fence was going to take the longest to fix. Evelyn decided to let them sleep a little longer and just kissed both her children on the forehead and closed the bedroom door as she left.

Evelyn walked back to the dinning room alone, which caused Lynette to raise an eyebrow. Evelyn smiled and answered the unspoken query from her sister-in-law, "Darmon and Sara, my babies are still asleep." As Evelyn uttered these words, she felt guilty as she saw the expression on her eldest, sad and hurt.

Evelyn went over to her daughter and hugged her, "Be patient, honey. I'm sure you will get your chance also." Elizabeth wasn't convinced but decided to not voice this.

Darmon had awoken when his mother kissed his forehead, but decided to not open his eyes, since for starters he was very comfortable hold onto his sister and secondly, his cock was hard as a rock and pushed between the cheeks of his sisters ass.

It was 30 minutes later, after Darmon was able to get his cock to shrink before his stirring awoke his sister. "Morning, sis", Darmon said and kissed her on the cheek,

he'd been doing that with everyone recently and knew for some odd reason it brought joy to everyone he did it to.

Sara of course was surprised at this and turned around to hug her brother, before returning the morning greeting, "Morning, little brother." They both got out of bed and in the daylight, Darmon got a good look at his sister. She was about 5'4" tall, with a slim waist and what appeared to be two points pushing the fabric of her large oversized t-shirt and bare legs that went down to dainty feet. Her toenails were painted the same color as the nails on her hands. When Sara noticed where her brother was looking, she blushed without drawing attention to this.

"Don't know about you, I'm still pretty tired and could probably stay in bed with you for another hour or so cuddling, but I'm hungry and could do with some breakfast and some orange juice to wake up", Sara commented as she took her brother's hand in hers, as they exited his bedroom.

Still sleepy the siblings, hand in hand, joined the family for breakfast. Elizabeth looked over at her sister with a jealous look. Sara in turn just gave her a small comforting smile and what could only be an apologetic expression. Only one other person noticed this exchange, their mother.

"Sorry, we're late. Neither Sara or I got much rest last night", Darmon stated, who didn't realize how this could be perceived by the others around the dining table. When Darmon heard gasps from most of the family, he looked at them strangely especially Amber who had an expression that he'd never seen before; Amber was very very jealous.

Sara also heard the gasps and saw the expressions, suddenly understood how her brother's words could sound to them and she quickly added, "Both Darmon and I, couldn't sleep and we chatted by the pool for what seemed like hours."

"Yeah, it was an interesting chat", Darmon, still clueless, added.

"We discussed things from my own point of view with what happened to our family, before I asked him about the new tradition that we learned about. I asked if I could stay over in his room and he agreed," Sara saw Amber's jealous expression and knew her cousin had feelings for Darmon. This brought her own feelings to the forefront and realized that for a longtime now she also harbored feelings for her little brother. She foresaw an awkward conversation that she will have to have with Amber and maybe even Jade.

"We only cuddled and slept peacefully, the first decent night's sleep in a longtime. For the first time in ages I let my doubts and nightmares fade away. I swear to god that nothing else happened," Sara stated, but secretly she wanting something to happen.

Breakfast was consumed in giggles, laughter and enjoyment. Agatha just smiled to herself and understood the healing process had started. Amber, got up from her chair, walked over to Sara, lent down and whispered, "Get changed and meet me in my bedroom. We need to talk," then walked off. Sara's expression changed to one of shock and simply nodded.

It was 45 minutes later, when there was a knock on Amber's door. Amber, opened the door to let her cousin in. Looking around the room, Sara noticed that Jade was also present.

"Thank you for coming, Sara. Please sit anywhere on the bed, couch or the dressing table stool," Amber greeted her very nervous cousin. She looked at the locations mentioned and opted to sit on the dressing table stool facing both Amber and Jade who decided to sit on her bed.

"Uhhmm, what is this about, Amber?" Sara asked in a quiet voice.

Amber didn't want to drag this out and got right to the point, "Sara, do you love your brother?"

Sara immediately started to respond, "Ye..." but was interrupted by Amber.

"No Sara, I mean do you LOVE your brother and I mean not as siblings?"

Sara was stunned at the direct question and didn't know how to answer, and gathering up her courage to answer honestly, "I don't know... I mean... For the longest time I have seen him suffer and wanted to be his support pillar. Darmon knows what I did to help him. At first my feelings were how an older sister should help and protect a younger brother."

Sara paused and Amber let her get her mind settled and waited for her cousin to continue, "The separation and the near death of my little brother had some effect on me. I know I love him but do I LOVE LOVE him, I can't give you a proper answer to that... But I will tell you that I have feelings that I will need time to process."

"Good, if you told me you LOVED him after only spending one night with him, I would call you a liar. Let me tell you right now cousin, I do LOVE LOVE him. The fool doesn't understand how I, Jade, mom or grandma feel, yet. Darmon has been starved for affection and is confused with how we feel," Amber said with conviction.

This day was starting to one where Sara was going to be shocked again and again, "We?"

"Yes, we. I'm going to tell you a secret that doesn't leave this room until Grandma tells you herself, do you understand?" Amber said and noted Sara nodding.

"Grandma, before you lot arrived and the next day after Darmon come to live in this house asked mom to seduce him and teach him the ways of truly loving a woman.

Initially, both mom and Jade were hesitant, but after spending so much time and getting to know his kind side, we were about to put that into actions; that's became impossible, for now, with the arrival of Aunt Evelyn, you and your sister. Truth be told, I wanted to be the one to teach and take his virginity, in fact, I wanted us to both lose it to each other."

"Oh god, oh god..." Sara mumbled.

Amber ignored this before continuing, "I'm tell you this now, so you understood why I was jealous thinking you had taken Darmon away from me. Don't get me wrong, if he wanted to lose his virginity with you and you were fully onboard with everything going on then I would have accepted this. Are you a virgin, cousin?"

Sara was stunned again with the direct question from her cousin before she replied, "Yes!" so quietly that Amber and Jade almost didn't hear the answer.

Amber smiled, "Good, Good! If your feeling towards him become more concrete, then I hope you save it for him. Until you sort out your feelings I will tell you one very important thing..."

Amber took on a menacing voice, "If you're just play around with Darmon and hurt him then I.WILL.MAKE.YOU.PAY.SARA." Sara understood the threat and could see how much Amber cared for her little brother.

Amber's voice softened after this as she took Sara's hands in her and said, "Listen, I'm sorry I was playing hard ball with you, but I only want what's best for Darmon. Once, you have sorted out your feelings and are onboard then I hope you can share Darmon with Grandma, mom, myself and Jade. Heck, I've seen our maids Helen and Alice eyeing him up also, so you may even have to share him with them," Amber chuckled before continuing, "You may even have to share him with your mom and sister. If he can win our hearts then I doubt your mother and sister will be a match for him."

Sara fell off the stool after hearing the last part, could she see mom and Elizabeth agreeing to this? Heck, mom would probably go along with the flow, if it meant she could be held in her son's arms, and if that also meant that she will have to take him back into her body, Sara thought it would be a small price to pay for her mother. Elizabeth she couldn't see ever happening from how her brother reacted, and what her sister did to him in the past, I suppose there is that saying, 'Never, say never!' and 'Seeing is believing!' so there maybe some hope there. What really bugged her was, 'Can she share her brother?' Sara couldn't answer that right then.

Both Amber and Jade lifted Sara up and sat her between them on the bed, Sara in a shaky voice asked, "Jade, do you feel the same way as your sister?"

"Yes, at first as my sister stated I was hesitant but not anymore," Jade confirmed.

"How do aunt Lynette and grandma feel?" Sara continued to ask, unsure if she really wanted to know the answer.

Jade answered this also with, "Both mom and grandma are onboard. Just remember, you don't know about this yet, and I suspect a secret female only meeting will be held soon to reveal this."

"I'm just shocked and stunned by all this. How am I supposed to act now around Darmon and the others," Sara quietly asked.

"No different than before, try to mend broken fences or bridges with your brother, and in turn see how his actions will change you and those around him. Just remember, Darmon is naive when it comes to females and how we feel about him. He's seen us naked and we've seen him naked also. Don't freak out if he sees you that way. I also suspect that after grandma reveals her plan then you, your mother and sister would likely have your own meeting."

"Is there anything else, I don't think I can take being shocked again today. I think I need sometime to process things in my room," Sara asked.

"No that was all, I know I dumped a lot on you and I just wanted to make it clear how we feel about him. I, no, we will not tolerate any further pain or suffering subjected on him, unless it's deciding who he is going to make love to first," Amber chuckled at the last statement. "Oh believe me he is going to doing that to many, if not all, of us within a year, mark my words on that." Amber laughed loudly finishing the conversation.

After Sara left, Jade asked, "Do you think you were a little hard on her, sis?"

"No, I don't think so. She had to learn that Darmon will have most of us, if not all of us, and we will be his and he will be ours. The little bitch doesn't know it herself, but I can tell she is already in LOVE with her brother, she's just isn't ready to admit it to herself yet."

Sara left Amber's bedroom in a daze. She saw the concerned look on her sister's face as they passed each other in the hallway. Elizabeth was about to ask her what was going on, but a look stopped her. Elizabeth reasoned that whatever was troubling her will come to light eventually. Evelyn also noticed her daughter's dazed look as Sara passed the living room towards her bedroom. Agatha and Lynette looked at each other, then nodded for Evelyn to go see what was going on. Evelyn got up and followed her daughter.

Sara had just entered her room and closed the door before she heard a knock, turning around she opened the door and to see her mother with a concerned look. "Honey, can I come in please?" Evelyn asked. Sara fearing her voice may break and reveal her distress just nodded, moved to the side to allow her mother in before closing the door.

Evelyn was clearly concerned now and moved to sit on her daughter's bed and patted the space besides her, "Come, honey."

Sara moved slowly towards the bed to the location indicated by her mother. Once she sat down, Evelyn wrapped an arm around her daughter and put Sara's head against her side, "What's wrong, honey. If it's something that someone has done then I'm sure it can be sorted out. You know you can tell me anything and I won't be upset or angry."

Evelyn waited patiently for her daughter to say something all the while comforting her. "I'm sorry mom. I've been shocked and stunned way too much today."

"What has shocked and stunned you today, honey. Is it something that Amber did or said? I saw she whispered something to you at breakfast."

"No, I mean... a little... I mean, I don't know."

"Honey, you're not making any sense."

"Mom, I can't tell you what is actually troubling me, but can I ask you something?"

"Sure, you know you can ask me anything," Evelyn confirmed with concern in her voice.

"Mom, if you knew you had to do something wrong for the greater good, would you do it?"

"I don't understand, honey. You're not making any sense. If you mean would I kill a killer for the greater good then probably."

"Yes, but not that exactly... I mean... If you had to love or be with someone you shouldn't, to make things right, would you?"

"Honey, if you think I will go back to your father, so that you, your sister or brother could live free, for the greater then I, suppose, I would sacrifice myself for that."

Sara suffered yet another shock, "Oh, god mom, No! That is not what I meant. I would never ask something like that, and wouldn't sacrifice you for that. I know I'm not making sense and it's something that I have to think about. I know this is probably rude, but will you let me rest and think more on this."

"Sure, honey. I'm not sure what you mean, but when you have thought more about it and want my opinion then you can count on my honest opinion." Evelyn got up and left her daughter to ponder, closing the door behind her as she returned to Agatha and Lynette.

Sara, continued to contemplate how she felt about this without coming to any conclusions.

Evelyn returned to her mother-in-law and sister-in-law and sat down again in the living room. Both Agatha and Lynette shared a concerned look between them.

"Darling, is Sara okay?" Agatha asked.

"Yes, I mean... I don't know. Sara was asking me something really strange," Evelyn responded still trying to understand the cryptic mumbling of her daughter.

"What did she ask, Evelyn," Lynette inquired.

"I think it was something Amber might have said, I noticed a quick exchange between them at breakfast and Sara is now in a dazed state. Sara told me that she has suffered many shocks today. She never told me exactly what is affecting her, but did ask something real strange. Sara wanted to know if I would do something wrong for the greater good. I asked if she meant would I kill a killer for the greater good and confirmed I probably would. I even said I would go back to her father, if it meant that she, her sister and brother would be free."

Evelyn was looking at Agatha and Lynette who passed a look between themselves, "I think Sara was more shocked at this, when I said I would do it in a heartbeat. Let's just say that this appalled her."

Evelyn saw another look pass between her mother-in-law and sister-in-law, "You know what she is talking about, don't you? What is it, you promised me that there would be no more secrets when we agreed to come here."

"We did darling, when Darmon goes to bed this evening, let everyone know to meet in the pool house for a meeting. Everything will be revealed later today. Darmon cannot know of this meeting," Agatha confirmed.

Evelyn went to each family member and told them of the meeting at night in the pool house.

Lunch and Dinner were quiet and thick with tension. After having some fun with his cousins, Darmon went off to bed wondering who was going to join him this night. Darmon didn't expect anyone, but had now starting to look forward to sharing his bed each night. Darmon would be sleeping alone this night.

That night all the women dressed for bed meet in the pool house.

Agatha, Lynette, Amber and Jade already knew what was about to be discussed, but Evelyn, Elizabeth and Sara to some extent were clueless and worried.

"Thank you all for coming to this family meeting," Agatha started.

"Uhhh, grandma, if this is a family meeting then why isn't my brother here?" Elizabeth asked.

"That is a good questions, sweetie. This is about Darmon and something of a delicate nature," Agatha answered. "Before, I begin, it should be noted that Lynette, Amber and Jade already know about this, and I suspect that someone else may now have knowledge of it also."

This comment made, Evelyn and her daughters to look at each other. "I should start by saying that my grandson due to his father has been sheltered from the outside world, and what he might have learned via interactions with other pupils, this includes both male and female."

Agatha paused to let it sink in how her grandson was cooped up in the house almost like a prisoner, then continued, "My poor sweet child is naive to the world and to women in general. I mean before he came to live with me, he sole interactions were his mother and siblings and maybe some of the maids. Those interactions I believe might have clouded his mind of women in general. Forgive me, Elizabeth sweetie, I'm will use you as an example here, she was a girl that was his the bane. Even when he did nothing wrong, he would get punished."

This obvious statement and example caused Elizabeth to burst into tears. Agatha soothed her, "Sweetie, I didn't mean to hurt you, but only to draw attention to how Darmon may perceive girls or women in general."

"I have done everything I can change any preconceived views he may have and have encouraged Lynette and my granddaughters to help change his views in a loving way. I have asked that they not shout, yell or hit him for any mistakes he may make, but to teach him. Which kind of leads into the next part which you Evelyn and your daughters may find difficult."

After another pause to let things settle, "Lynette, Jade. Have you now made your decision? Are you both onboard? I already know Amber's opinion on this."

Both said almost in unison, "Yes!"

"Good, good. Evelyn, Elizabeth and Sara. The others have agreed to teach Darmon the ways of women. They have agreed to teach him how a man should love a woman, with love, passion and empathy. I want to avoid him treating women, as his father does." As Agatha heard gasps from Evelyn and Elizabeth, she continued in a calm steady voice, "Had my grandson been allowed interactions with the outside world, I would have let him find his own path in life. I don't want to bring in outside help, like whores or sluts that may further taint his views of women."

"I had initially asked Lynette to seduce him, and teach him how to love and make love to a woman. Although, Amber has already expressed the desire to do that and my daughter will miss the boat if she delays any further."

Evelyn's mind was in turmoil, this wasn't something that she ever expected to hear. Elizabeth wasn't any better as she burst out into tears again. Agatha tried to comfort her, "What's the matter now, sweetie?"

"My brother, hates me... He won't ever accept me into his harem, if you're all proposing to be with him. What chance do I have of being happy?" Elizabeth sobbed.

"Mom, are you sure this is what you want?" Evelyn asked.

"I've never been more sure of anything else, darling. Elizabeth, Sara. Can I ask you both if you're virgins?" Agatha confirmed.

Sara, who knew this was coming, simply stated, "Yes, grandma." Elizabeth was a little more bashful and shyly said whilst looking at her mother, "Uhhh... I... I'm not a virgin... I mean, I don't have my hymen anymore... ummm, I mean to say, I haven't had a penis in my vagina."

"Elizabeth, sweetie, can I ask how you lost your hymen?" Agatha asked.

"Uhhmm, to the handle of my hair brush..." Elizabeth blurted out quickly.

"I understand, sweetie. Just to confirm, you haven't fooled around with a male and a penis has never come anywhere near your vagina," Agatha asked to clarify.

"No, grandma. I've not seen or touched a penis in my life," Elizabeth confessed.

Agatha smiled, "Good, Good! What I mean is that we can conclude that all my granddaughters are virgins where it matters."

Agatha looked at Evelyn to see how she is taking the news. Evelyn somehow came to a realization that this could bring her closer to her son and then stated out, point bluntly, "Mom, if I'm onboard with this, then I won't do it unless it is me that takes my son's virginity. As his mother, I feel it is my duty for the pain and anguish that my in-actions have caused him. That is not to say the others cannot teach him how to love a woman, but I will not accept anyone else to take this away from me."

Amber shot up from her seat ready to argue her point, but a look from her grandma made her sit down again. "Evelyn, darling. You do know that Amber wanted to lose hers at the same time as her cousin, right? The poor girl is madly in love with him."

Evelyn looked over at Amber and took her niece's hands into hers, "Honey, I'm not telling you not to lose it with him, all I am asking is if you will allow me, his mother, who loves him so much, who needs to show her son that she loves him unconditionally. I haven't felt the love of a man for over 18 years."

Amber sulked and Evelyn brought her head close to Amber's with her forehead resting against her niece's, "Maybe, we can have a private talk later."

"Can I assume, Evelyn, darling that you're onboard, with that condition? Elizabeth, Sara. What are your views on this?" Agatha asked.

"Yes, mom. If I can strengthen my bond with my son, then I have no problem with any of the women here forming an intimate relationship with my baby boy."

Sara, who already knew how her mother would have taken to the development and she called it, spot on. Her mother wanted to form a bond with her brother, and she felt this was a sure way to achieve that goal. Sara, thought about her own feelings, she was still a little confused with how she felt, "Grandma, I don't know how I feel about this and will need time to decide, as my feelings are all a jumble."

"Understood, sweetie. Just be mindful you may witness others forming an intimate relationship with him, that would also include me, whilst you are processing your feelings. I hope you can handle that, if you do later choose to join in. I don't expect anyone to openly do anything sexual if one or more people aren't onboard yet. Later, if everyone is onboard then it would be Darmon's right to initiate things and have them in the open should he choose to."

"Grandma, I want to join, but doubt I will ever get the chance to. God knows, I have a lot of guilt to atone for, that is not to say I would do this purely for that reason alone. I believe that, I can give my brother, the love he was denied. I just don't know how. Darmon hates me," Elizabeth sobbed.

"Darmon, loves you sweetie. He is just angry at the moment. I'm not going to powder coat this for you, as your struggle may be the hardest. Just keep slowly building your relationship with your brother. Other than that I will assume you're onboard. So that just leaves Sara to process her feelings, although I can already see she will come around soon enough," Agatha stated.

"So with that said, this meeting comes to a close. Just before, we all go back to our own beds, Darmon must not know of this meeting and what was discussed here. Take that as an order, not a request. I don't want to influence Darmon's actions if he is aware of this. I want him to grow to love us naturally and not feel he has to so, so that he can stay happy or force him to think he has to do this to make us happy. I know I have said no secrets in this family and when he has made us all his we can tell him, how we had all felt at the time."

Sleep that night alluded most of the women, their thoughts now were on how best they can start being sexy for Darmon. Everyone subconsciously agreed to a slow progression.

The next day, Elizabeth armed with knowledge that everyone was going to try and seduce her brother, feared that his mind would be always elsewhere and needed to make him see her, before things got complicated. Elizabeth setup a whatsapp group for all the women and asked if they can delay their plans, so that she could make another attempt at reaching out to her brother. Everyone responded that they were fine with that and would delay things for one day only.

Elizabeth during breakfast made an attempt to get her brother to listen to her, "Darmon, would you please give me a chance to explain. I just want us to talk, so you could understand things from my view. Please brother, give me this one chance."

Darmon, recalled Sara asking him to give her a chance and he sighed before responding, "Okay, if I feel this is a trick or something then I will leave and never speak to you ever again."

Elizabeth was stunned at his threat and knew he would do it if she wasn't sincere, "Yes, I understand. Would you like to do this in your room or mine?"

"Let's go to your room," Darmon said flattered.

The rest of the women smiled and prayed this talk went well. Elizabeth lead her brother to her room.

Once inside the room, Elizabeth motioned for him to sit wherever he wanted. Darmon decided on the couch and Elizabeth turned the dressing table stool towards him and sat on it. "Firstly, I would like to apologize for all my actions that resulted in dad beating you." Darmon remained stone faced and waited for her to continue.

"I know you probably hate me and I wouldn't hold that against you if you did. I was 7 years old when dad started to beat you and at first I worried about you and wanted to help. It's just dad was scary and I didn't want what was happening to you to happen to me. I didn't understand why dad would do that, so I asked mom about it and she just told me dad was evil and not to upset him. This kept going on and no one could do anything about it. After some of the beatings, mom would comfort you and I let it slip one day to dad."

"The next day, after you got beat again, dad praised me and gave me a new doll, it wasn't my birthday or anything, so didn't understand why he did that. After that day, he would ask me if mother or Sara had any contact with you. When I said no he would look disappointed and just do something else. A short while later when I would see mom give you some affection, I would feel jealous, and after I reported what I saw to dad, I was praised and gifted something new. I think mom realized I was telling dad about her attending to you and started to avoid you."

"With nothing to report, dad would ignore me and I felt lost and lonely. So, to get the praise from dad, I started to make things up. I thought that if you were going to get beat by dad anyway, then why don't I gain from it, like getting his approval and gifts from him. I didn't know how dad was punishing you as he would always do that in the basement. My mind was thinking it can't be that bad, so why would me reporting things be any different to any other beatings you got from dad. All I knew was that I got praised and gifts and wanted them so I would not be ignored."

Darmon remained silent and let Elizabeth continue, "You see I was starved for affection, mom had stopped being loving towards me. I realized that I was the cause of this because I would tell dad about her and you. I craved the affection, so kept on making things up. It wasn't until your last beating before you went missing that I saw first hand how dad was about to murder you. Each time before, the beatings you suffered were never in front of me, so didn't know how much you were suffering. If it wasn't for mom and Sara throwing themselves over your body, you would be dead now, I know dad would have done it."

"After that I was appalled at my actions and decided to see if mom and Sara would forgive me. I wanted to help nurse you back to health like mom and Sara did, but the guilt I felt prevented me from doing so. A few weeks after you suffered that attack, mom, Sara and I went out to the park to get away from things at home. Dad was at work. We arrived about an hour before dad got back from work. Dad was looking happy and went down to the basement, I suppose to beat you. I saw dad going down and was ready to jump in to protect you this time, if dad got too violent. I suppose that when he couldn't find you in the basement he stormed upstairs looking for you. I got scared and joined mom and Sara in the living room."

"Dad was very angry and blamed mom for helping you escape. Darmon, he struck mom hard across the face, enough to make her fall and cut her lip open. I've never seen dad this angry before, bar that time he nearly killed you. Sara stopped dad from kicking mom in the face and we both stood between him and mom. I was truly scared for all of us that day. After that day, mom would sleep with either me or Sara and sometimes both, with the bedroom door, always, locked. Every so often, Dad would try to drag mom away to their bedroom and either Sara or I would intervene, or in most cases both of us together. Eventually, dad gave up trying."

"It seems that Sara was in touch with grandma, which neither mom nor I knew about. It was Sara that let grandma know you had gone missing. It was Sara that informed both mom and I when you were found and eventually the plan to get us away from dad. So that is my story and I thank you for letting me explain."

Darmon was quiet for a bit before he asked, "So let me get this straight. You did this to not be ignored and get the affection you craved?"

"In simplistic terms, Yes." Elizabeth quietly confirmed.

"Well, I can relate to that, sis. All my life as far as I can remember, I have also been seeking that, not to be ignore and feeling loved and wanted. Well thank you for telling me your side of this. I will need time to ponder this."

"I understand, brother", She was ecstatic that her brother had referenced her as, 'sis,' and returned it back to him. "I promise that I would do everything I can to make it up to you, even should it take my whole life."

After a small pause, Darmon got up and was moving towards the bedroom door as Elizabeth gathered her courage, "Uhhh, Darmon, brother. I know you had no one share your bed yesterday. Hmmm... Uhhmm, will you allow me that honor tonight. I really think this would benefit us both."

Darmon was about to deny her, but he kept hearing Sara's voice telling him to give her a chance. He sighed and simply said, "Okay," then left her room.

Elizabeth moved to her bed and fell backwards onto it with a big sigh of relief. She thought, 'just maybe, just maybe... he can come to love me.'

Let's just say that at lunch and dinner, Elizabeth was giddy and everyone noticed this. Evelyn smiled at her and even kissed her a few times throughout the day on the cheek. Elizabeth during the cousins fun times, before bed, wasn't being ignored by

her brother and this made her laugh and join in more with the fun. There were knowing smiles as Elizabeth relaxed and enjoyed herself more.

That night Amber really wanted to get started on her cousins seduction, but promised Elizabeth one day, so accepted that Elizabeth was going to spend the night with Darmon.

All too soon, it was bed time and Darmon held Elizabeth's hand as he lead her towards their bedroom, after their nightly routine was completed. Darmon who had slept with many of his family, knew that soon he would be cuddling the woman. He got into bed in just his boxers and waited on Elizabeth to come lay besides him. Darmon was surprised that instead of just crawling into bed like everyone else had, Elizabeth took off her t-shirt, with her naked breasts exposed. The natural reactions of a male kicked in and he started to get hard. Elizabeth's breasts were nice handful or at least Darmon thought they would be in his hands.

Darmon was further surprised that instead of how all the other women would immediately turn their backs to him so that he can put his arm around them, Elizabeth moved facing him to rest her head on his shoulder and it was her hand and arm that rested on his chest. Elizabeth sighed contentedly and mumbled, "Thank brother, for allowing me the chance to redeem myself."

It was Darmon's day for surprises this day, as his sister moved up with her hard nipples poking his side, so that she could bring her lips to her brothers and kissed him full on the lips. Darmon, initially, in shock wanted to pull away but didn't as Elizabeth held his head close to hers with a hand behind his head. The kiss lingered a little longer than any of the kisses he had been given from any of the others, and this included Amber who was the most affectionate with him. Elizabeth giggled giddily and as she pulled away confessed, "Thanks for giving me a chance, brother. I love you and hope that one day you can forgive me."

Elizabeth quickly put her head back down to hide the blush that made her face hot. To say that Darmon was confused would be an understatement, his cock was harder than he could ever remember. Elizabeth decided to put her leg up onto her brother

and felt his hard cock. She didn't say anything, but she certainly felt her pussy get wet. Elizabeth just prayed that her brother didn't smell the musky scent that her nose caught.

Both of them slept so well that night and whenever they would think of how their relationship started it would this event that they would fondly remember.

When Darmon and Elizabeth both arrived to breakfast the next morning they were hand-in-hand. Agatha laughed so loudly, she was clutching her sides, "My grandson's magic has worked again." Darmon simply shrugged as he didn't know what his grandma meant which in turn made all the women around the table laugh and the maids joined in also.

To say the seduction battle truly started that day would, what some famous actor called a 'cluster fuck'. Each of the younger women would try to one up the other. It started innocently enough with some playful horsing around in the pool. The women would jump up on Darmon to rub their breasts into his face and many a time hard nipples would be poking his arms, back or chest. Darmon would be hard for most of this time as they joked and jostled for his attention.

Later, after wanting to sunbathe a little, the younger women would ask Darmon to apply suntan lotion on their back, legs and feet. It was Jade that started the trend of undoing her bikini top. Initially, she would be faced down and ask her cousin to apply the lotion to her back and sides, making sure her cousin applied the lotion to the side of her boobs.

Amber, right out just took her bikini top off to sunbathe topless. Elizabeth had already shown her breasts to her brother, followed Amber's lead and not only did she take her bikini top off, she asked her brother to apply the lotion to her front, including her breasts. Jade also decided it was time to go topless. Sara was getting jealous of her sister and cousins. Sara knew that now that they were given the green

light, she would be seeing them all tease her brother. The older women were also enjoying the glorious day and out sunbathing themselves. Agatha was laughing at the courtship dance the girls were doing to entice their man.

It was Jade who was about to one up everyone again, when she hooked her thumbs into her bikini bottoms ready to drop them when the shit hit the fan. Lynette shouted, "STOP!" before Jade could drop her bikini bottoms. This in turn startled everyone. Lynette addressed her nephew, "Honey, will you please forgive us as I take, your grandmother, my daughters, your mother and sisters for a quick meeting. We won't be long. Enjoy relaxing a little, the girls have certainly been keeping you busy." She looked down to see her nephew was hard and had been for most of the morning.

All the females went to the pool house again for a spontaneous meeting. Darmon in the meantime, tried to relax and hope his cock went down. Helen and Alice both decided to see if he wanted anything, it was more so that they could also look at his hard-on without drawing too much attention to themselves.

In the pool house, Lynette was angry, "What the fuck, Jade?"

"What, mom? We were just having fun," Jade defended.

"Yes, I could see that. I saw each of you girls try to one up the other. Do you realize that Darmon has been hard most of the morning with a serious case of blue-balls? Have fun, play around to seduce him, but don't torture the poor man. Being how naive Darmon is with sexual matters, I doubt he even knows how to take care of that himself. Jade going fully nude must be done gradually. What he or you do in private is just that private and you could teach him about release and until he has learned how to do that, seeing everyone nude together is going to only hurt him."

"It's okay, you're young, Jade. All the fun, teasing and excitement has been great for you and I doubt there is a pussy that isn't wet seeing my son hard. Just think how this will affect him. Start off slow. You've now established topless sunbathing and by extension topless swimming. Move away from full nudity for a more gentle approach, like kissing him, let him feel your breasts as you rub up against his body. Darmon might not be ready for anything more yet," Evelyn requested.

"Sweeties, it's been fun seeing your interactions with Darmon, and hope it continues. Both of your mothers are right. Tonight, as punishment, none of you will get to sleep with him. Either myself, Lynette or Evelyn will do that with a view to showing him how to masturbate. When we go back out there please behave yourselves," their grandma requested and to inform them of their punishment.

Amber, who was ready to join Darmon this evening let out a big groan and huff, "Aaaahhhhhh!!!!"

Jade looked at her sister and apologized, "Sorry, sis."

When Amber returned with the rest, she was clearly in a sulk. Darmon noticed this and decided to spend sometime with her to cheer her up.

Sara not wishing to be left out also went topless to enjoy the morning sun.

Darmon didn't know what was upsetting Amber, so held her close to him as her naked breasts with hard nipples poked his side. Darmon remembered how happy it made Elizabeth when they kissed on the lips last night, so held his cousin's chin up and lent down to place his lips against hers. This exchange was witnessed by everyone and all the females that surround them instantly had wet pussies. Agatha laughed to herself again and inwardly commented again about her grandson's magic. Darmon also recalled what Elizabeth has said to him last night and whilst not fully understanding the meaning behind these words said, "I love you."

Amber suddenly burst into tears and Darmon panicked, he thought he had done something wrong and didn't know how to fix it. He started to look around for help and when he saw tears in the other's eyes, he panicked even more, before suddenly getting up and ran to his room.

To say the 'cluster fuck' exploded would be a nice way to describe how all the women couldn't comprehend what had just happened and how this reaction stunned them all. Amber was in a panic as she thought she had done something and the younger women couldn't figure out what the fuck just happened. Eventually, it was Agatha who believed she understood what just transpired. "Amber, sweetie. You didn't do anything wrong. Darmon just told you he loved you and what did you do? You burst into tears, he can't tell the difference between tears of joy or tears of sadness. He panicked thinking he had done something wrong or hurt you. When he looked around for help he saw tears in all of our eyes. He ran because he didn't know what to do and since we all had tears in our eyes, he probably thinks he did something really bad to you, sweetie."

Suddenly understanding the situation, Amber was chanting, "Oh God... Oh God... Oh God... I need to go tell him, he didn't hurt me."

Lynette sighed, "Honey, stay put I will go explain things. If he see you now, it might confuse him and not let him hear your words." While all the rest were left to the revelation made by Darmon, Lynette left to head towards her nephew's bedroom.

Lynette, like her daughters had been given permission to enter his room without knocking and she just did that. Her nephew was face down on his bed gently sobbing. Lynette walked over to him and sat beside him put her hand on his back which she gently rubbed.

"Honey, you did nothing wrong," Lynette said in a quiet soothing voice.

Whilst sobbing, Darmon rejected that assessment with, "Then why did Amber cry? I hurt her and saw tears in all of your eyes. How did I hurt her, auntie. I promise I won't do it again, I won't hurt her *sob*."

"Oh, honey. Sometimes, when we cry they aren't always tears of pain, suffering or sadness. Sometimes, we cry tears of joy. I know it's confusing, it's just how we humans are sometimes."

Darmon retorted, "Then how do I know which is which?"

"That is a difficult question to answer, honey. With time and experience you will learn to tell the difference. For now, if you don't know which one you are seeing then ask. Honey, did you understand the words you spoke to Amber?"

"What, 'I love you' you mean?"

"Yes, honey. It is these words that caused Amber to burst into tears. Do you understand what they mean?"

"I don't know, Elizabeth said them to me last night and it made her happy. I said them to Amber because she was sad. When I said those words I got a funny tingly feeling in my stomach and it felt good."

"Oh, honey. If you tell a woman that you 'Love' them, then you are expressing a desire to be with them and to make them a part of your life. You should know that Amber loves you also. Let me ask you something, honey. If Amber suddenly went away, how would that make you feel?"

"Sad, I would hate to not have her near me."

"That honey, is love. If you would miss that person if they weren't in your life, or if you cannot find to be parted from that person then that is love. I know it can be confusing as there are different kinds of love also."

"This is so confusing, but does that mean I love you all because I wouldn't be able to live without any of you in my life."

"Yes, honey that is love also." Darmon rolled over and was looking up at his aunt as she lent down to kiss him on the lips. The kiss was gentle and long and it made Darmon hard again and Lynette pussy was very wet.

When she separated from her nephews lips, Lynette looked at him with love in her eyes, "How did that make you feel?"

"Tingly inside and my penis got hard."

Lynette laughed, "I can see that, honey. Would you like to learn more about love and how those in love can express themselves?"

Darmon was nodding his head so hard that Lynette thought he might get whiplash, he sat up then kissed his aunt on the lips, this made Lynette swoon with joy and she could smell the scent of her leaking pussy.

When they broke for breath, Lynette giggling like a school girl and said, "I will come to your room tonight and we can spend sometime to enjoy how love could be expressed between those that love each other. Until then, come back as lunch should be ready shortly and Amber is in a panic as she thinks she did something wrong."

Everyone was gathered in the dinning room as Darmon returned with Lynette. Darmon saw Amber and rushed over to her and took her into his arms whispering, "Sorry... Sorry, I ran away." Amber started to cry again and this confused Darmon, he looked over at his aunt who smiled making a heart using her hands to show these were tears of joy. Darmon, lifted her head up again to look at him before kissing her again. Amber's legs went to jelly and she would have fallen to the ground had it not been for Darmon holding her up. Darmon lead her to the table and Amber sat almost in his lap as lunch was eaten.

After lunch, Lynette took the older women to one side and told them what happened and also that she was going to spend the night with Darmon to teach him about 'kissing' and 'the female and male bodies' and 'mutual masturbation.' Lynette was asked if she thinks he was ready for that and she believed he was. Lynette also told them that while he didn't fully understood the concept of love, he was certainly feeling it.

Afternoon was the same as the morning, with less horsing around and more sensual touches and kissing. Even Sara got involved and had to admit to herself that she was onboard even if that hadn't been voiced, yet. Even the older women, got into the kissing game with Darmon, but always closed mouth. Darmon for the better part, while not fully trusting her yet, somewhat forgave Elizabeth. He didn't quite know how that happened, but later on, he would have to say the other girls played a big part in this. They helped clear his mind and kept his focus away from how she had treated him and and rooted him in how she acted now towards him.

Dinner was the same as lunch, Amber was practically glued to Darmon's side. She was clearly in love, the love you would be willing to die for and have babies with. Agatha was over the moon about that and she started to make plans on how to take down her son, but until then she wanted everyone here in her grandson's harem.

Her son, Jacob had waited a few days for his wife and daughters to come home and when they hadn't returned, he had started to call all his wife's friends and daughter's friends. None, had seen or heard from them for awhile. In the end, he called his mom and sister, to see if his wife or daughters had contacted them.

The conversation went something like this:

Phone ringing, caller ID confirmed to Agatha it was her son. Agatha answered after letting it ring for a bit.

Agatha: "Hello."

Jacob: "Have you seen or heard from Evelyn and the girls?"

Agatha: "Well, well, so nice of you to greet your mother this way, not even a 'Mom, how are you?'."

Jacob: "*sigh* Hey, mom. how are you?"

Agatha: "Very pleasant, son. How are you?"

Jacob: "Mom, can we cut the crap. Have you seen Evelyn and my girls?"

Agatha: "Don't tell me, you've misplaced your wife and daughters, and son."

Jacob: "Misplaced nah. We've just taking some time apart, is all."

Agatha: "If you're taking time apart then why do you need to know where they are?"

Jacob: "Not that it's any of your business, but we had a fight and she's not returned after a few days."

Agatha: "Well, good for my daughter-in-law. She finally left you, so now I can answer the 'how are you?' question myself."

Agatha: "Besides, you forbade them from seeing me. My granddaughters never get to meet their grandmother, so why do you think Evelyn and the girls would contact me?"

Jacob: "Do you or don't you know where my fucking whore of a wife is? She has MY daughters with her. Elizabeth and Sara are MINE."

Agatha: "So is Darmon, how is my grandson doing, son?"

Jacob: "*LAUGH* *COUGH* *LAUGH* I killed the bastard and got rid of the body. Good luck with your plans on getting him. If you tell me where the whore is then I will give you a map to where that whores bastard is buried."

Agatha ended the call, but remained calm as Jacob hadn't figured out that his family was right under her roof and protection.

Later that night, Darmon was alone in his bedroom with his aunt. "Honey, before we begin, I must confirm that you're completely okay with learning from me, your aunt. If you would prefer someone else like your mother, grandmother or Amber then please do let me know now."

"No, auntie. I am happy to learn with you," Darmon confirmed.

"Good, I would be lying if I said it wouldn't have upset me if you choose someone else. I'm looking forward to teaching and loving you, honey. Whatever you learn

here you can put into practice with the others. I am sure they would love to experience this with you also."

Darmon just smiles, "What are you going to teach me?"

"For starters, the art of kissing. Followed by the differences between a male and female body. The final lesson for today, would be how to gain self pleasure as it is different between males and females."

Lynette turned and faced her nephew and looked into his eyes, "We've already kissed before, so lets start with that first."

What followed was 5 minutes of both aunt and nephew with their lips locked and every so often they would separate to catch their breath, giving each other small pecks. After awhile, "Honey, that was wonderful. Now we are going to learn what they call French kissing. This time when we kiss again, open your mouth a little and stick the tip of your tongue out. When I kiss you again, I will also have my tongue out. when my tongue touches yours, let our tongues massage each other, whilst are lips are locked. Can you do that for me, honey?"

Darmon nodded and got ready, this time he opened his mouth slightly and moved the tip of his tongue out from between his lips. Lynette was satisfied with this and moved back into kissing her nephew.

This time, as their lips joined, Lynette own tongue came out to lightly lick her nephew's. The kissing lessons were having an big affect on Darmon and his cock was almost painfully erect. The French kissing grew stronger for both of them and soon their tongues were in a playful duel and swapping spit.

Lynette after another 5 minutes, pulled back and looked in wonder, her pussy had been leaking non-stop for awhile now, "Honey, you learn quickly and are a natural at

kissing. The other's are going to love doing that with you. Do you want to take a small break before we go onto the next lesson?"

Darmon shook his head, he loved kissing his aunt, especially what she called French kissing. If all the lessons were going to be like this then he didn't want to delay anything.

"For the next part, I am going to undress and be completely naked. I'm going to show you my body and point out each part." Lynette got undressed and sat on the bed. "First we will cover the the various main erogenous zones on the female body."

"You already know of one of those zones, the mouth and lips," Lynette points to her mouth.

"Another is the neck," Lynette points to the back of the neck and around the front.

"The Scalp," Lynette runs her hands through her hair rubbing close to her scalp.

"The navel," Lynette points to her belly button.

"The small of your back, some women love gentle fingers caressing this area," Lynette turns slightly and shows her nephew her lower back.

"The inner thighs," Lynette points out the location.

"The back of the knee," Lynette points out the location.

"The bottom of feet and toes," Lynette shows you her sexy feet.

"The next erogenous zones will also form part of your knowledge of the female body."

"The breasts, which are formed of the nipples and areola. The areola is the darker ring around the nipple and can vary in size between females. The nipples are the small area raised in the center of the breast which is where milk is expressed when a mother feeds their baby," Lynette shows her breasts to her nephew.

"The female genital. This consists of the pubic mound," Lynette points to her pubic area. "In adult women, this would normally be covered in hair, but some women have varying levels of hair. Some have a lot of hair, some have trimmed hair or some sort of designer hair, for example a triangle or landing strip and others prefer to have the hair removed by either shaving or waxing," Lynette pointed to her pubic mound and Darmon could see that his aunt had hers nicely trimmed. Darmon was sure that previously she had no hair, but thought she must have let her hair grow to show him.

"Next we have the Vulva, this is the around either side of the vagina," Lynette pointed out her vulva.

"Next we have the labia, these consists of outer and inner ones lips," Lynette points out the outer and inner labia.

"At the top of the labia, there is a bit of skin that hides the clitoris. This area is one of the most sensitive areas on a female," Lynette opens her labia to show her nephew her clitoris which is already poking out of its hood.

"Under the clitoris is the Urethral opening and it is where a female pees from," Lynette points about a centimeter below the clitoris to show this opening.

"The larger opening until the Urethral opening is the actual vagina opening. It this location that males would insert their penis when they are trying to conceive a child.

It is also the location when a male and female express their love when having sex or making love," Lynette points to her vaginal opening.

"Lastly, we have the anal opening, since you already have one of those, you already know the purpose of that. For the record, some women and gay males like to have things or a penis enter here as it could stimulate them. Please note that not all females or gay males like anything inserted here."

"The female genital is commonly called a pussy or cunt."

"Now all these zones can be used with the kissing lesson and stimulate the female to greater heights of pleasure. Do you have any questions so far? Don't worry, if you can't retain all this information for now. Just the general knowledge of these will help."

Darmon's cock was tenting his boxers as his aunt showed off each part of her body, but just shook his head to show, 'no questions.'

"Honey, can you please remove your boxers, and we will now cover the male genital," Lynette asked her nephew.

Darmon quickly stripped off his boxers, and was now naked in front of his aunt. Lynette marveled at how large her nephew's cock was. It had to be more than 9 inches in length and as thick as her wrist. Her husband's cock was at best 7 inches erect and not nearly as thick as her nephew.

"Honey, I'm going to touch you now, if that is okay. So you can learn the parts of your own body better," Lynette requested her nephew's permission. She smiled once her nephew had given permission and was seriously looking forward to holding this monster cock in her hands.

"As with the female body, this area here is your pubic mound. In your case you have pubic hair, some men like to shave, so it is completely bold like some women do. If you ever want to try having it bare, then I will be more than happy to help you," Lynette ran her fingers through his pubic hair.

"This is your penis and is the male's sexual organ when hard, and when flaccid will act as the urine track for when you pee," Lynette grabbed her nephew's cock and stroked it a couple of times.

"Sometimes, the penis can be called many different names, the most common ones would be cock and dick."

"Under the cock is your scrotum, which is a pouch that contains your testicles, where your sperm is created when having sex with the desire to try and impregnate the female, so they can have a child together."

"Do you have any questions, honey," Lynette asked again. Darmon once again shook his head.

"Right, we are now to the last lesson for this day. You should master these lessons before we move over to more advanced lessons. Remember, if your partner agrees then you are free to try these on her and with her. Just remember to respect the female and if she, 'No,' then that means, 'No!' and her wishes should be respected."

"When males masturbate they would normally, just hold the cock in hand and stroke up and down to generate pleasure. Males should continue this until they ejaculate their semen, this semen could be caught in a tissue to stop any mess. Here I will show you how to hold your cock and how to stroke it," Lynette grabbed her nephew's cock harder and started to masturbate him. "When by yourself you would do this yourself alone, but when you have a partner with you and she is willing to help, then you can always ask her to help you masturbate. Some women find pleasure in doing this for their partners."

Lynette continued to stroke Darmon's cock and within 3 minutes she had managed to make her nephew cum. Darmon moaned loudly as his climax hit, and his aunt saw a geyser erupt from the head of his cock. A few minutes later, after Darmon had managed to catch his breath, his aunt continued, "Since, this was your first ever ejaculation it was likely a lot quicker than it should be. Practice to make it last longer as this will make it more enjoyable for you and your partner."

"Now that we have covered the male orgasm. Would you like to see how a female masturbates. The techniques differ between females, but generally women would stimulate their clitoris until they also cum. A female will not ejaculate semen like a male does, but some lucky females can produce a clear liquid at the point of the climax."

Lynette opened her legs wide and showed her nephew her pussy, and started to rub up and down her slit, "Going directly for the clitoris is usually a bad idea, as this doesn't build up the tension and excitement required for a female to reach orgasm." Darmon's cock started to get hard again as he watched his aunt playing with her pussy.

"Once, the excitement has built up for a woman, some like to put fingers inside their vagina," Lynette pushed two fingers into her pussy and moaned. "Some would directly rub and flick the clitoris," she continued, as she used a finger to rub her clit. Lynette was moaning even louder as the pleasure built for her.

Lynette through lidded eyes saw her nephew was rock hard again, "Honey, do what I did to you, when I masturbated you, by yourself as you watch me." Darmon looked down at his cock and indeed saw how hard he was, grabbing his cock, he started to pump it.

Lynette now having added stimulation, continued, "Some women, like me, like to rub either side of the clitoris hood." Darmon was watching as his own pleasure was mounting, moaning and groaning.

This mutual masturbation session continued for another 5 minutes, when all of a sudden Darmon's cock erupted with large jets of white cream landing on his aunt's hand and pussy. This set Lynette off and she raised her butt off the bed and made a face that looked like she was in pain, panting and moaning out her nephew's name, "Oh honey, Oh Darmon, that was amazing. I haven't enjoyed something like that for a long time."

Lynette looked at her nephew and told him how she truly felt, "Honey, I love you." Darmon overcome with emotions himself, lay besides his aunt and brought her close to tenderly kiss her. Lynette moaned in pleasure.

It had taken more that 10 minutes for both of the lovers, for that is what they were now lovers, to catch their breath. "Wow, auntie. I didn't know anything that it, could feel this good. Thank you for teaching me. I love you too, auntie."

Lynette giggled and then rested her head against her nephew's shoulder and sighed in total relaxed pleasure. "No honey, it is I that should be thank you for coming into our lives. When your uncle died, I never thought I would feel this way ever again. You're a blessing to this family. We should get some sleep, there's no need to get dressed anymore. I love being naked with you."

Both aunt and nephew fell into a deep contented sleep until the next morning. Lynette awoke first, and she was looking at her nephew with pure love shining in her eyes. As Darmon stirred, Lynette leaned over and kissed him tenderly on the lips, "Honey, come. We should shower together before we go get some breakfast."

In the shower, both aunt and nephew were French kissing with Lynette's hand sliding up and down her her nephew's cock. Darmon in turn was playing with his aunt breasts and even had one hand playing with her pussy.

Somehow, Darmon managed to make his aunt orgasm first and Lynette screamed into her nephew's mouth. As Lynette came down from her high, she started to stroke his cock harder, until Darmon in turn released his sperm all over his aunt's belly.

After they had both caught their breaths, and washed their bodies, Lynette turned off the water, moved up on tip toes and kissed her nephew before whispering in his ear, "Honey, I don't think I will be able to live without you. If I could, I would stay in bed with you all day and teach you everything you need to pleasure a woman and I in turn will show you how women can pleasure a man. Our next lesson will have to wait, I'm afraid, honey. I'm hungry!"

Lynette was giggling like a school girl, as the aunt and nephew pair entered the dining room. Everyone could see a glow and a look of pure love, she gave her nephew as she held onto his arm, looking at his face. Lynette when she saw her mother and the rest of her family, with glee, went to hug each of them and kiss them on the cheek. Everyone looked over at Darmon and he comically started to look around him thinking they were looking at something behind him. It was Amber that went over to him, pulled his head down and French kissed her cousin before dragging him to the table. The glow and happy aura that Lynette had was even noticed by the maids, who smiled inwardly.

At breakfast, Agatha related the telephone call she had with Jacob, and how he gleefully bragged that he had killed Darmon.

"So, I think it best that for the moment, Evelyn and her children, should remain in the house, let's limit unnecessary exposure. I don't expect this to be more than a couple of weeks, at least until Jacob gives up," Agatha requested.

Everyone agreed. The younger group, today as per usual these days, enjoyed themselves. The bonds between the younger group were growing. In fact, the younger group seemed to gain a member, Lynette, who was feeling young again decided she wanted to be near her nephew. She also used the excuse to monitor the girls to make sure they didn't go overboard.

Agatha and Evelyn were left to watch and enjoy life, to de-stress as best they could. Agatha commented to her daughter-in-law as a topless aunt jumped onto her nephew's back and wrapped her legs around him, so the other girls could try to poke and tickle Darmon, "This is the happiest I have seen my daughter since before the passing of Martin. In fact, I've never been happier myself, and it's all due to one young man. He has managed to bring everyone together, and even completed some tasks that I might have called hard, not impossible, just hard. If that's not his magic, then I don't know what to call it."

"Mom, he is my son, your grandson, and as much as it pains me to say it, he is Jacob's also. I was never unfaithful to him, mom. I loved that man, but that loved died the day he took the belt to our son. Sometimes, I wish Darmon wasn't Jacob's, I know he is your son and my husband, but I despise and hate him with every fiber of my body. I now live for my daughters and son, especially my son."

"I know, darling. I never doubted you. I need to ask you something, darling. Do you want to divorce my son? Know that if you do, I will take you over him and to me I would get the better deal. I would gain a loving daughter," Agatha asked as she looked over at Evelyn.

"Yes, mom. I want to divorce him, but I doubt he will let me and my daughters go," Evelyn sighed.

"Darling, let me worry about that, if you want to divorce him, then we can make that happen. The next question might be hard for you to answer. Since, you have agreed to take your son's virginity, are you okay with doing this before your divorce? What I mean to say is that you have confirmed you have been faithfully to Jacob, but if you do this with your son, before the divorce, then you would be breaking your vows."

"Mom, my marriage is already dead. I doubt Jacob would stay celibate, and be waiting for me. For the last 18 years, he has only ever fucked me anally and then roughly to cause me the most pain possible. To answer your question, yes, mom. I would happy make love to my son and even let him knock me up if he wanted, all before the divorce. If I could I would keep him all to myself, but I know that would be

selfish of me. I know others want him also, so will share," Evelyn chuckled before continuing, "Can you imagine, what his sisters and cousins would do to me, if I tried? You have only to look at Lynette to see how much of a cat-fight I would have on my hands."

"Thank, darling. Just know that if you commit to your son, then there will be no chance later for regrets. You will be his and he yours," Agatha commented as she looked over at Evelyn and gave her a gentle smile. "You think, Lynette would be the worst one if you tried to pull that stunt. My claws are sharp, darling."

"Do, you recon Amber will allow Darmon to claim her tonight, mom?" Evelyn asked genuinely concerned.

"Oh, my sweet darling. My grandson, you son, has already laid claim to Amber. Amber has known for awhile that she is his, his confession yesterday all but sealed it for her. Amber is just waiting for the chance to take their relationship to the next level. What interests me is how long before the domino effect will start. Once one has toppled, would it be a chain reaction. The girls are young and emotions may run amok, they may accidentally take his first time away from you."

Evelyn looked startled, got out her phone and started a female only group chat:

Evelyn: "Honey's, mom and sis. Can I make a request please?"

Agatha's and everyone's phone pinged. Agatha read the message, looked over at Evelyn before replying.

Agatha: "Sure, what's up?"

Everyone's phone pinged again. All those in the pool asked Darmon if they could be excused and all went to read the messages. For the next 10 minutes the constant

pings had Darmon wondering what was going on, but decided to get out and rest on a lounge waiting on his family.

Amber: "Hmm... What's up aunt Evelyn?"

Sara: "Mom?"

Jade: "Auntie???"

Elizabeth: "Is this a secret? The constant pings of messages doesn't make it secret you know, mom!"

Lynette: "Why do it over the phone, we could just have another emergency meeting like last time."

Evelyn: "Can I ask my daughters and nieces to let either mom or I attend to my son this evening? I know you wanted this night, Amber."

Amber: "Why?"

Agatha: "I see, it was about a conversation that I had with your aunt, Amber. It has already been confirmed your aunt will take her son's virginity, and she fears that one of you... I'm looking at you Lynette and Amber, will take it away from her."

Amber: "What?"

Lynette: "To be fair, it is a valid fear. I would have gladly let my nephew make love to me last night, if I didn't have that at the back of my mind."

What followed next was a series of pings and all the women asking about last night and with Lynette blushing whilst giggling typing away fast. Darmon got bored, looked at his own phone wondering if it was going to ping also, when it didn't he headed inside.

Nearly an hour later, the women's chat ended with Agatha chosen to visit her grandson that night. When they all finished they looked up and noticed how long it had taken, and saw Darmon had left. It was Elizabeth that pointed out that everyone had ignored her brother, with concern etched on everyone's face. With the overriding thought, had they all hurt him? It was Amber who nearly lost it when she claimed she was a bad girlfriend and all rushed off to seek Darmon out.

Darmon, did feel ignored when that happened, but he had learned that sometimes women just needed time to themselves. As much as he wanted to always be with each of them, he knew that wasn't always possible.

Darmon ventured into the kitchen and had a quick chat with the cook before going into the hallway to find the maids were taking a small break. Darmon came up behind them and placed his left arm around Helen's waist and right arm around Alice's waist. The maids, initially, jumped and when they saw it was the young master they relaxed. Darmon lent down to kiss each of the maids on the cheek, "Thanks for being great maids and thanks for always helping me and my family."

"You're welcome, young master. We would do anything for the mistress and her family," Alice on the right said.

"Is there anything we can do for you, young master?" Helen asked

"Nah, the other's phones with pinging non-stop, and I got bored, so came in to see what was going on."

"Oh dear, are they ignoring you, young master? How about we keep you company until they notice," Alice asked.

Darmon nodded and for next 15 minutes he got to know the maids and how long they were in the employ of his grandma. It was Alice who had started first about 5 years ago and Helen was employed to help after the death of master Martin, his uncle. Darmon also learned that they live in a small house just past the pool house and are live-in staff. The cook and drivers all come to the small house in the morning and stay there until needed.

"Young master, as part of our duties we have given the mistress and her family, massages. Can we offer one of those to you also?" Helen asked.

Darmon never had a massage before and really wanted to know what that was all about, "Yes, although I don't know what a massage is."

The maids lead the young master to another room that had a massage table and oils on a shelf to one side.

"Young master, will you take off your clothes and lay face down on the table, while we prepare," Helen asked. Darmon just stripped off his trunks which made the maids gasp before he lay down on the massage table.

"Young master, would you be okay if we both remove out uniforms to prevent them from getting dirty with the oil used in the massage?" Alice asked.

Darmon nodded, "Yes, that is fine. I don't mind."

Instead of moving out from line of sight, both maids decided wordlessly to tease him and removed their uniforms as he look at them both directly. Both maids were wearing matching lacy bra and panties. Helen's was red and Alice's was light green.

Darmon had time to admire their bodies, Helen was taller than Alice by about 4 inches, but it was Alice who had the larger chest. Both had slim waists and long shapely legs. Both had their hair tied into a bun with what could only be described by Darmon as the maid crowns, that kept the hair pulled back off their faces.

Darmon didn't know the definition of beauty, as only the females and those he saw when shopping could be used as a comparison. If comparing to his family, they were on par with them for sure.

The maids saw the look that the young master was directing at them, and the nipples of both maids started to harden. Helen started at his head, whilst Alice started at his feet. Both applied oil to the hands and started to work in the oil to loosen any tight knots. Both maids looked at each other in alarm when they saw all the various scars on his back and legs. It wasn't that they hadn't noticed before, but not as close or touching them like this.

The maids spent about 20 minutes doing the young master's back, legs and arms. Darmon feeling their hands on him had gotten hard, and when the maids asked him to turn around, he didn't even hesitate.

Both maids gasped again and quietly moaned. Their nipples got harder and pussies started to leak. Not taking their eyes off the young master's impressive cock, which stood up from his body. The maids changed positions and Alice started at his head, with helen now the feet. Both maids applied oil to their hands and started to rub it into the young masters body.

Darmon's cock would jump and move as the maids applied pressure to his body, and this in turn caused wet patches on the gussets of their panties. Darmon started to smell a different scent than the oil or perfumes the maids were using. Darmon recalled the scent of his aunt's pussy, when it was aroused. 'Wwere the maids excited?' he thought.

The maids slowly moved around so that they faced each other with their hands dangerously close to the young master's cock. The scent of their pussies got stronger to Darmon and he decided to see if they were indeed wet. He moved his hands to either side and touched the gussets of each of the maids. Yes, they were wet. As Darmon felt them up, they both moaned loudly and both maids were just about to grab his cock, when the door burst open and Darmon's family piled in.

Agatha quickly saw what was about to happen and laughed out loud, "Hahahaha... My grandson has enthralled Helen and Alice too."

Both maid's quickly moved away, and away from the probing fingers of the young master, with heads held high but gaze downwards. Many of the family member had looks of jealousy and stern looks directed towards the maids. Agatha saw this, "Stop with those looks. It was only a matter of time before this happened. Helen and Alice, will not steal him away from any of you."

Darmon got up from the massage table, sighed and tried to put his trunks back on. Amber went over to him and kissed him, "Forgive me, Darmon. I've been a bad girlfriend for ignoring you." Darmon looked down at Amber and smiled.

"Nah, I know everyone needs some time away or maybe alone. What's a girlfriend?" Darmon asked.

Everyone realized just how naive Darmon really was to the outside world, and they all looked over at Lynette, "What? I hadn't covered that in the lessons, yet. Darmon, only found about love. It was scheduled for a future lesson."

It was Evelyn that took charge and lead everyone to the living room. She sat Amber to her son's right, whilst she sat to his left. "Honey, when two people love each other and are committed to only be with that person, they can be classified as dating. Dating is where a couple want to spend time together to get to know each other. Whilst they are dating the couple will call themselves boyfriend and girlfriend."

Evelyn knew this was a simplistic view of this, but she didn't want to confuse her son anymore than this for now.

"Oh, I see. So, because I want get to know Amber better and love her, she is my girlfriend. So does that make you all my girlfriend's? Since I love and want to get to know each of your better as well," Darmon asked innocently.

It was Agatha who laughed again and said, "Yes, my sweet child. It would make me happy to be your girlfriend." This brought chuckles and giggles from all the women who agreed that they were his girlfriends and he was their boyfriend.

After lunch the younger group went out to sunbathe, and everyone asked their boyfriend to apply suntan lotion on them, and they in turn applied it to him.

With the younger group were out by the pool enjoying themselves, the maids come to Agatha, Lynette and Evelyn. They bowed low, "We are sorry, if what you saw has caused offense or misunderstanding, mistress," Alice stated. The older women group looked over at the maids and their crestfallen faces. It was Lynette who corrected their perception, "Helen, Alice. You did nothing wrong. We were all silly for ignoring Darmon. We got caught up in the group chat. It is in fact we, who should, thank you for keeping Darmon entertained until we realized our mistake." After hearing this the maids had looks of relief, since they knew how much the young master meant to this family.

"But, can I ask how you both feel about my son?" Evelyn asked. This caused both maids to look at each other and a wordless understanding was reached.

"What do you mean, madam?" Alice asked, she just wanted to confirm her understanding of why the madam asked this question.

"Isn't it obvious? Do you want to pursue a relationship with my son, knowing that he will be in a relationship with his grandmother, aunt, cousins, sisters and even his

own mother. If my son decides he wants you in his lover's group what would you tell him and us?" Evelyn replied as she looked sternly at the maids.

Helen and Alice once again looked at each other and a brief nod passed between them before Helen answered, "If the young master wants either or both of us, then we would be fools to turn it down. We both are fully aware that we would be joining an incestuous group and to be honest we can accept that. We have only known him for a few months now and can already see how he has changed this family."

It was Agatha who next needed to confirm, "Are you both in relationships already? Also, you know that everything that happens in this house, and within this family is to be kept a secret."

Helen and Alice looked over at each other again, "Mistress, we understand the secrecy and the consequences if word got out. We would never wish for that, mistress," Alice replied before both girls looked down and, "Being live-in maids, we are not in any relationships with any males, that is not to say we are virgins, which we are not. It's just that with the lack of any suitable males, we are in a sort of relationship... I mean, we don't love each other... It's just for relief."

"Oh my god, you're lesbians," Agatha asked shocked.

Helen looked at her mistress a little upset, "No mistress. If anything we are bisexual. We both have needs, as does most other women, and doing it alone wasn't enough anymore. I don't know who or how it started but it's just something that happened..."

"Mom, don't hold that against them. Even, I experimented in college before I meet Jacob. What I really want to know is, if you would continue this relationship should my son accept you into his harem," Evelyn asked, ready to veto there acceptance.

Before, the maids could answer, Lynette smiled and stated, "This is perfect, we don't know if our girls would be willing to experiment, if they thought Darmon would be

against it. He needs to learn how different girl-on-girl sex is compared to standard male-female sex, this could form a future lesson, if our girls don't want to that is."

Evelyn veto suddenly died, before she could voice it. It was Alice that finally answered Evelyn's question, "If the young master accepted us, and he didn't want Helen and I to be intimate with each other, then we would stop, immediately."

Helen quickly added, "Until the young master decides one way or another, we will keep our relationship a secret. Should the young master accepts us, we will stop this relationship. We will only do it as par madam's request, so that the young master can view how girls can have sex together. If at anytime, the young master looks disgusted by or decides later that he doesn't want his women to do that, then we will stop, immediately."

"Well, I can accept that. What about you, mom, sis?" Lynette accepted the inclusion of the maids, if her nephew wanted it.

Agatha couldn't give a proper answer as she needed to discuss this with her granddaughters first, "Helen, Alice, in principle I will accept it, but should any of the girls not like this, then the inclusion will be revoked. Do you understand?"

Evelyn looked over at her mother-in-law surprised that she hadn't thought about the views of her daughters and nieces, "I agree with mom on this. If they accept, then you're in, if my son wants to include both of you or just one of you. Just know that if my son only wants to include one of you then your relationship with each other will end, that isn't up for debate. I will not have my son cucked."

Both Helen and Alice agreed to the terms. After the maids went back to work, it was Agatha who voiced a concern, "I thought this would be easy. Get my grandson interested in all of us, so that he could learn to love and protect us. With so many different view points this has gotten a lot more complicated."

Both Lynette and Evelyn burst into laughter. "Nothing was ever going to be easy, mom. I just feel sorry for Darmon who has suffer our various different moods or insecurities," Lynette said whilst chuckling.

Agatha was aghast at what she had started, "Oh god, my poor sweet child..." This in turn made Lynette and Evelyn clutch their sides from laughing too much.

Darmon, was looking forward to seeing who will be wanting to sleep with him. It did take long before the door opened and his grandma entered.

"Sweetie, are you okay for me to join you today?" Agatha asked.

"Yes, grandma. I would like that very much," Darmon replied happily.

"Thank you, my sweet child," Agatha said, before taking off all her clothes.

Darmon's eyes opened wide as he looked at his naked grandmother. She was nearly the same height as his aunt. Her breasts were a little larger than Lynette's and sagged a little, not much but Darmon could tell they weren't are firm and perky as his aunts. Agatha has more hair covering her public mound and even in the bedside lamp light he could tell there was hints of grey hair.

Darmon's cock instantly hardened and his grandmother smiled as she saw that even at her age, she could still attract the attention of a virile male. "My sweet child, will you also get naked and we can go over the lesson that your aunt taught you. If you want to that is."

Without replying Darmon stripped his boxers off and looked at his grandma to see if she approved. Agatha smiled and moved towards her grandson as he in turn moved towards his grandma.

The kiss they shared almost made Agatha's knees buckle. Darmon recalling the various erogenous zones, broke the kiss then lay gentle kisses to his grandma's neck, upper chest avoiding the areola and nipples for now before moving to her navel. Darmon kissed around her belly button before dipping a tongue inside. Agatha had never been more turned on and moaned loudly.

Darmon could smell her scent as her pussy leaked, he moved back up to capture her lips with his and pushed his tongue into her mouth. For the next 5 minutes, grandma and grandson French kissed. Agatha knowing she would collapse soon, lead her grandson towards his bed.

As they both fell onto the bed, the kiss was broken. Agatha giggled and raised her hand to stroke his cheek, "Oh my sweet child. You have no idea how happy it makes me to see you happy and not reject me."

"Reject you, grandma. Why would I ever do that?" Darmon was puzzled and queried.

"Oh, you know... I'm not a spring chicken anymore... I'm old, I thought you would prefer the others over me," Agatha replied as she looked at her body.

"Grandma, you may be older than the others, but that doesn't mean I don't like you or would reject your love," Darmon was confused by this grandma's statement.

"Of course, silly me. I know my sweet child wouldn't ever do something like. Ignore me," Agatha chuckled and then thought to herself, 'How could I even think my grandson could even reject me.'

Darmon looked at his grandma in shock, "I will never ignore you or anyone that I care about. NEVER! I know what it feels to be ignored." It was then Agatha realized how the naive man could perceive her words.

"Oh, my sweet child. I meant ignore my words and not to ignore me. I already know you will never ignore those you love," Agatha caressed his cheek and then kissed him.

"From what I understand of the things you have already done with your aunt would you like to explore your grandma's body? I know that I would love to explore your in turn," Agatha said to sooth any doubts her grandson may have had.

After Darmon nodded, Agatha lay back on the bed and opened her arms and legs, to give permission for her grandson to get to know her body. Darmon looked at her breasts and saw that she had dark areola's and nipples that stood proud about an inch from her breasts. The areola's were larger than his aunt's. His grandma's belly was a little more rounder than his aunt's. Looking at his grandma's pussy, her clitoris wasn't poking out like his aunt's was and her outer labia were larger and darker too. Darmon also saw that his grandmother vagina was a lot pinker and more open than his aunt's also. All in all, his grandmother was different to his aunt, in a good way and marveled at how women could differ in size, shape and other areas.

"You're beautiful, grandma. You're different to aunt Lynette, not in a bad way. I'm just amazed by the differences, and if all women are different then I doubt I will ever get bored looking at you all," Darmon said as he looked at his grandma and marveled how different, yet the same, she was to her daughter.

Agatha swooned with the compliment, "I understand that your auntie taught you about masturbation. Would you show me how she taught you to masturbate yourself and I will show you how I like it." Agatha was excited that she was going to finally do this with someone else. She had been pleasuring herself for the last 10 years after her husband passed. This was going to be the first time she has been able to express her desire and love with someone else, and who better than her grandson.

Darmon smiled and took his cock into his hand and started stroking whilst watching his grandmother watching him. Soon Agatha started to feel horny watching her grandson's, Darmon's eye open wide as she started to play with her pussy. Agatha teased her clit out from the hood it was hiding behind, put a finger into her vagina to wet it with her juices, then started to rub her clit in circles moaning and panting. Within minutes Agatha lifted her bum off the bed and shook in orgasm. Darmon watched as some liquid shot out of vagina. He continued stroking as his grandma relaxed, she looked up at her grandson with love then said, "My god, my sweet child. I haven't had an orgasm that strong in a long time or ever."

"My sweet child, I can see you haven't finished yet. Can I teach you again lesson or would you prefer to only learn from your aunt?" Agatha asked hoping beyond hope that her grandson accepts.

"Sure, grandma. I would love to keep learning," Darmon accepted without any hesitation.

"Thank you. Can you stop masturbating for a bit, so that I can explain about oral sex?" Agatha asked her grandson. Darmon stopped stroking and Agatha got a close-up of her grandson. Her husband, Darmon's grandfather was large, not as large as her grandson, but was plenty enough to give her great pleasure. "I know your aunt explained about erogenous zones and that kissing or licking them can cause great pleasure for males and females. When a woman uses her mouth on a males penis or cock, it is commonly called a blowjob. When a male uses his mouth and tongue on a woman's pussy it is called cunnilingus or pussy eating," Agatha explained.

"Would you allow me to teach you how to eat my pussy?" Agatha asked hoping that Darmon would say, 'Yes.'

Darmon wasn't sure he could say anything, and just nodded quickly and sharply, this made Agatha smile and then spread her legs wider, "My sweet child, it is important to make the woman feel loved and get them excited, so do not go directly for her pussy or clitoris. You will have better results if you kiss, lick and even bite gently the inner thighs of your companion. Come and try what I just mentioned on your

grandma," Agatha was interested in see how her grandson will implement what she said and didn't give further instructions on the foreplay.

Darmon, started from his grandma right knee. He lay small pecks, licks and gentle bites as instructed, as he went up towards his grandma's pussy. Darmon kissed the junction where her legs joined the vulva, missing the pussy altogether then from top of her thigh to her left knee.

Agatha was leaking like a faucet. In fact you could say the tap was open, she was amazed at how fast her grandson was learning. She moaned in pleasure, "My sweet child, you will know that you companion is ready when you can see her pussy glisten, wet and her arousal scent will be unmistakable. When you next reach my pussy, using your tongue lick from the bottom of the vagina to the top, for now avoid the clitoris. Just enjoy licking the pussy and even sometimes sticking your tongue as deep as you can into my vagina."

Darmon did as instructed and this built Agatha's arousal to heights she never thought she would experience ever again. Agatha was now moaning and panting very hard, in broken voice, "My sweet... Child... turn.. your body.. around, so... your cock is... towards... my face." Darmon never leaving his grandmother's pussy twisted around so that his feet were pointing beyond his grandma's head.

Agatha saw the large cock in front of her eyes and had to stop her grandson to give him the next instructions, "My sweet child... can you... stop, please..." Darmon thinking he did something wrong stopped and looked at his grandma with a puzzled look. She let herself calm down for a few seconds before assuring her grandson, "You did nothing wrong, darling. I just wanted to give you the next part of the lesson before we continue."

"Okay, I like your taste, grandma. Never tasted anything like this before, but I'm enjoying it," Darmon said with a happy expression.

Agatha felt great pride in knowing her grandson wasn't adverse to the taste of pussy, "My sweet child, I'm going to take your cock into my mouth as you continue to lick and eat my pussy. This position is what they call sixty-nine and allows a couple to both enjoy this together. When I start sucking your cock, I want you to eat my pussy and this time pay attention to my clitoris. I want you to suck it, flick it with the tip of your tongue, even draw it between your lips and gently pull on it."

With that Agatha kissed and licked the shaft of her grandson's cock. Darmon in turn went wild on his grandma's pussy. There was no finesse in what he did, Agatha knew that will come later as he gets more practice.

Eventually, Agatha opened her mouth wide and to allow the glans of his cock to enter her mouth, she was swirling her tongue around the glans with a gentle suction. To Darmin this was an new experience and one that was bring him to the point of having his own orgasm. Agatha was also close to having a mind blowing climax.

It didn't take long, for Darmon to eventually release the pressure he had been feeling and shot jet after jet into his grandma's mouth, who swallowed as fast as she could. Agatha was amazed at how much of his large load she kept in her mouth with only a small amount leaking around the seal on her grandson's cock. Darmon, didn't stop licking his grandma's pussy as he shot jet after jet into her mouth, after swallowing the first spurt, Agatha lifted her butt off the bed and went stiff. Darmon got a little panicky, when his grandma stopped breathing as it had taken over 30 seconds before his grandma relaxed and flopped back down on the bed.

After catching her breath she motioned for her grandson to move around then pulled him close before initiating a deep French kiss. Darmon wasn't sure about the taste of his grandmother's mouth, but she didn't seemed to mind how she was licking his face clean of her own juices. The kiss broke after a few minutes, and she whispered in a quiet voice, "Oh my god, my sweet child. That was the best orgasm I've ever had. I can't wait to experience more of this in the future."

Agatha held her grandson's face in her hand and with a look of pure love, "I'm so glad, I got you in my life. I love you with all my heart."

"I love you too, grandma. I liked what we did, can I do this with the others or is this just a thing between us," Darmon asked, pleased he had made his grandma happy.

"My sweet child, everyone loves you and would like to be intimate with you like we did, and what you did with your aunt. If you didn't do this to the others, I suspect that there would be some upset ladies," Agatha chuckled. "I'm sure that your aunt already told you, if they say, 'No' then that mean's 'No.' Respect your girlfriends, okay?"

"Wow, thanks grandma. I understand, I don't want to hurt anyone," Darmon said before yawning, "Sorry, I'm tired, grandma."

Agatha was also tired, "Yes, I think its best we get some rest." She moved to her side and scooted up to her grandson before resting her head on his shoulder with his arm wrapped around her shoulders. Soon they both slept.

After a night's rest, he was disappointed to see his grandma had already left the bed, he was hoping to shower together like he had with aunt Lynette. He got up and went to shower alone.

In the dinning room, all the females were sat at the table already. Everyone noticed the glow surrounding Agatha and the smile that just wouldn't leave her face. Lynette couldn't stand it anymore, "Mom, I've never seen you like this before, what gives?"

Agatha giggled then replied, "I had the most amazing night with my grandson."

Evelyn panicked, "Mom, you didn't make him a man, right. Please tell me you didn't."

"Oh darling, that privilege is yours. In addition to reinforcing what Darmon learned from Lynette, I also taught him about oral sex. I taught him about blowjobs and eating pussy. I taught him how to pleasure a woman and gods he's good. He's technique is raw passion alone for now, Darmon lacks the finesse in the art of munching pussy. I'm sure that as he learns and practices more then he will learn those skills. I came twice last night, once whilst he was watching me masturbate and the other when I taught him how to sixty-nine. I've never cum as hard as I did last night. There's no longer any doubt in my mind, I love my grandson. Not as a grandmother loves a grandson, but I'm in love with my grandson."

Lynette laughed loudly, "Now you know how I felt, mom."

Amber screamed, "AAAAhhhh!!! Are you doing this on purpose to make me jealous?"

"No sweetie, when your time comes, you'll feel exactly the same way we do. You know, I'm more jealous of your aunt Evelyn who will get to take the one thing from him that can only be given once," Agatha said then looked at her granddaughters. "Just remember this when you all get a chance with Darmon. His virginity, is his mother's to take. Once, he has lost that, then all bets are off. I know I will have him inside me, it's just a pity that he can't get me pregnant. I would gladly have his baby."

"Uhhmm, grandma, maybe we should discuss that now, whilst my cousin isn't around," Jade commented. "I mean... are any of us on birth control? I know I'm not". Everyone confirmed they weren't.

"So, if we have sex with him, then unless we get on birth control there is a chance he could impregnate us. How do we feel about that?" Jade asked to get everyone's opinion on this.

Amber was the most vocal when she clearly stated, "I will not insist on any form of birth control and that included asking him to wear a condom. We will have to explain

to him that if he has unprotected sex with us, then there is a chance he could get us pregnant. I might be young, but I know I want to have children with Darmon."

"I've already made it clear to mom, Lynette and some others, that I want to have his babies. I will not also use any form of birth control," Evelyn flatted told them all.

Elizabeth was onboard also, but Sara and Jade were on the fence, they thought they might be too young to have children, but agreed that they also won't use birth control and let the gods or fate decide.

The conversation suddenly stopped as Darmon entered the dinning room, hungry for breakfast. He gave each of the women a closed mouth kisses that last 15 seconds each, with the exception of his grandma, where he gave her a 30 second French kiss. Darmon didn't notice the jealous looks some of the women gave Agatha.

Amber typed a message to the women's group chat that flatly told everyone that "I'm next and this isn't up for debate." Everyone's phone pinged, except his. Darmon raised his eye brows, but didn't otherwise comment. All the women read the message and just shook their heads.

That night Amber did indeed visit Darmon's room. Within minutes of Amber entering the room, they were both naked and lay on the bed, kissing. Amber was a younger version of her mother, Lynette. Amber was around 5'7" tall, with small breasts that had very small pink areola's, with the nipples and puffy areola's pushing out from the center of each globe in a cone shape. Amber's pubic mound was bare of any hair and had been that way for a number of years, it wasn't to please any boyfriends she had at the time, but more that she liked the look and thought hair there was unhygienic.

Darmon knew that something had changed in each of the women in his family after the love lessons from his aunt and grandma. Darmon wasn't going to stop any of this as he felt closer to each family member, he was finally getting the love and affection that was denied him until 5 months ago.

Darmon knew he had no concept of how the outside world worked, or even of women in general. He was loving every moment he got to spend with his family, he craved that attention now, and knew it would likely kill him if it was taken away from him. Maybe this was karma after bad things that happened to him and now the world was trying to balance things. Darmon, did have the thought that if karma switched sides again then it could all come crashing down.

Whilst they were kissing on the bed, face to face, Amber was stroking his cock. When Darmon hesitated to do anything, Amber moved her boyfriend's hand to her breasts. He automatically started to fondle them much to the delight of Amber. As their passion mounted Amber moved to her back, pulling Darmon on top of her and moving his right hand to her pussy. It didn't take long for Amber to buck and shake in orgasm. Amber's pussy was a little sensitive following her orgasm, "Babe, I've just cum and am sensitive. Let me suck your cock until I recover."

Darmon stopped toying with Amber's pussy and moved off her, to sit on the edge of the bed. Amber also got up and knelt between her cousin's legs, grabbing his cock. Amber started to stroke her cousin, after a few pumps she looked into his eyes as her tongue came out to play. Darmon didn't know if it was him or Amber that moaned, maybe it was both. She stroked, sucked and teased his glans with her tongue. The steady blowjob soon had Darmon peaking and blowing his load into Amber's mouth. She swallowed many of her cousin's spurts but left enough in her mouth. Darmon watched as Amber took her mouth off his cock, opened her mouth to show him the cum in her mouth, closed her mouth then swallowed before opening her mouth to show it was all gone.

Darmon remembered to ask for permission, just in case she said no, "Amber, can I eat your pussy in return?"

Amber, was overjoyed that the man she loved wanted to feast on her pussy, "Babe, of course you can. You don't ever have to ask me when we are alone. My pussy and everything else, belongs to you." Amber got up off the floor and lay down on the bed with her legs wide open. Darmon got a close-up look at her pussy, Her vulva were plump and hide her slit. When her pussy was opened, she had small tight labia with a light pink vagina. Darmon notices that her vagina looked almost closed and not anything like his aunt's or grandma's.

Darmon remember what his grandmother had taught him and kissed, licked and nibbled the surrounding areas to built up the tension in Amber. Soon Amber was squirming with inpatients, her pussy was very wet and Darmon remembered this was something to look out for. Amber felt his mouth on her pussy and instantly exploded into orgasm. Amber was moaning and panting, but Darmon never let up on, this time attacking her clitoris, licking her pussy and sticking his tongue into her vagina, or at least he tried to, he wasn't having any luck pushing his tongue into her vagina. All of this attention brought his cousin to 3 more orgasm before she had to push his head away, "Babe, let my pussy reset please. Come up here and let's kiss some more."

Kissing turned out to be more foreplay, where Darmon sucked and nibbled on Amber's neck. Darmon's cock was rock hard again. While facing Darmon, Amber grabbed her boyfriend's cock and pushed it between her legs, she nearly took him inside but at the last minute placed the top of his shaft to rub against her pussy lips. The back and forth action soon had them both reach orgasm.

Darmon put her head down on his shoulder as both his aunt and grandma seemed to like that after reinforcing the lesson given by his aunt and grandma. They both were quiet, with some contented sighs from Amber that told him everything he needed to know. Darmon knew they would both confess their love for each other and their bond would be stronger for it, as it had been with aunt Lynette and grandma.

During the night, Amber awoke and decided to give Darmon another blowjob. This awoke Darmon who saw what was happening and moved Amber into a sixty-nine position. They brought each other to orgasm again.

Of course, they overslept due to all the loving throughout the night. It was Lynette who came to wake them up and smiled as she saw them naked in bed, and spotted the mess they had made during the night, "Wake up, lovebirds. You've already missed breakfast with everyone. Go take a shower and come to eat something. You both probably used up a lot of energy last night." Lynette pulled the cover's back, she was also looking out for any signs of blood on the sheets, satisfied there wasn't, left them to get up.

Both Darmon and Amber showered together, but no funny business as they were both still recovering from last night. Amber looked at her boyfriend with love, she never truly believed all those tales of, 'love at first sight,' but how else could she explain the attraction she felt for her cousin. Initially, the feelings she felt were strange and Amber couldn't understand them. After that first day she spent with her cousin, everything came crystal clear within mind and heart. This was, 'love at first sight,' or how she now believed they were soulmates.

The woman had another meeting after Amber spent the night with Darmon. Everyone grilled Amber and asked her if it was just as she expected, what they did and then the order for the remaining harem members. Amber was honest with them all and told them it was better than she could've imagined and then related everything they did. Everyone teased Amber when they saw the hickey on her neck.

The order was decided to be Sara, Jade, Elizabeth and finally his mother, Evelyn, who was going to teach her son how to make love.

Sara joined Darmon that night. Sara was around 5'4" tall and had perky breasts with hard poky nipples, with long legs and beautiful dainty feet. Darmon decided her breasts were bigger than Amber's, but smaller than either his aunt's or grandma's.

With everything Darmon had learned to date, he was keen to show them his progress. He learned to stay hard longer and not orgasm as fast as he did with his

aunt. Darmon spent what felt like hours eating his sister's pussy to many orgasms. Sara in turn sucked and jacked off her brother all over her tits, he also noted that his sister's pussy was free from hair and her vagina opening was also closed like Amber's and she had larger puffier labia. Darmon also noted that each woman that he had eaten tasted different. In the case of his sister, she had a sweet taste.

When it was Jade's turn, Darmon saw that she didn't have the exact same looks as her sister or mother, maybe she got some of her looks from her father, uncle Martin. Jade was a few inches shorter than Amber, but had breasts much larger than his sister Sara's. Jade's breasts were firm and lifted upwards, with dark pink nipples and larger areola's.

Jade's pubic mound was trimmed and her pubic hair was cut so that it looked like an inverted triangle was pointing to her pussy. Jade also loved it when her cousin would lick and eat her pussy to multiple orgasms. Jade gave him a blowjob and handjob, but wanted her cousin to lay on his back and she rubbed her pussy against the underside of his shaft which brought them both to orgasm.

Elizabeth was scared shit less when it came for her time with her brother. Darmon, when she entered his bedroom that night was also a little apprehensive. Neither took their clothes off straight away and spent a long time just kissing and her brother just sensual nibbles on the neck and earlobes.

Darmon would touch her breasts over her night clothes and she in turn will fondle his hard, boxer covered, cock. Slowly as both became more aroused, they broke the kiss and got naked. Elizabeth was about the same height as Amber and breasts almost the same size as hers. Elizabeth has dark areola's with dark hard nipples. Elizabeth's pubic mound had a long strip of dark hair above her pussy.

Darmon had to admit that even when his sister was a bitch to him, he found her attractive and seeing her naked like this didn't change his opinion. Darmon, saw how, after revealing her story, she had been trying to make amends and had seen the effort in making things right and accepted this new version of his sister.

Darmon put everything he had learned to practice and learned that each woman had different requirements to help them climax. It didn't take Darmon long to make his sister orgasm twice using his mouth before she pushed him off. As Darmon was eating his sister out, he noted that her vagina was more open than that of Amber, Sara and Jade, but still wasn't as open as his aunt's or grandma's.

Elizabeth sucked his cock and swallowed his load. During the night they ended up in a sixty-nine where Darmon put a finger or two into her vagina, this made Elizabeth cum hard and flood his face with her clear fluids. This surprised Darmon more than anything as his sister continued to suck until he once again came in her mouth, she swallowed this load also. When both were empty she moved over to her brother and licked his face clean before French kissing him. Sleep was easy after that.

Let's just say that after Amber's hickey the other women also wanted Darmon to mark them as his and would come to breakfast showing the hickey off as they entered the dinning room, usually hand-in-hand.

After breakfast, the women all went to the pool house again. Darmon didn't give it any thought as he thought this was a girls only talk. Darmon went to his room and got changed into some trunks and went to relax on one of the loungers.

In the pool house, the first thing the women asked was how did Elizabeth's night with her brother go. Elizabeth relayed everything including how her brother stuck two fingers in her pussy during a sixty-nine and made her squirt all over his face. Many of the women were jealous of Elizabeth for being able to squirt.

"Trust me, that was the first time ever I've squirted. It never felt that good before when I would masturbate myself. Mom, it's your night with him tonight, right?" Elizabeth smiled remembering the night she had with her brother.

Evelyn paused to gather her thoughts and courage to go through with this as it would, totally, mean that her marriage to Jacob was over. It would also mean that she would give all of herself to her son; mind, body and soul. Evelyn feared that her son might not want to have a fully intimate relationship with her, one where he would reenter the channel of his birth. This pause from what her daughter just asked made the other women nervous.

"Please don't tell me, you're having second thoughts, aunt Evelyn," Amber asked.

This question brought Evelyn out of her thoughts, she smiled at her niece, "No honey, if my son will have me then I am his. My thoughts were around him rejecting me and what I would do if he did."

"That's never going to happen, sis. That young man, has nothing but love in his heart for those that would love him in return. He's not going to reject you," Lynette responded.

"Oh, I'm pretty sure he wont. It's just that I know, going through with this would mean I will commit myself just to my son. No other male will ever come between us and that includes his father, unless he gets me pregnant and I have his son. Do you understand, it would mean my 'Mind', 'Body' and 'Soul' will belong to my son."

There were looks of surprise on each of their faces. Agatha was the one that answered her daughter-in-law's plea for understanding, "As it should be, darling. My son has treated you badly and my grandson will mend that broken heart."

All the women each pondered the conviction of Evelyn's words and each questioned how committed they were to this.

For Amber, it was an easy one and she already knew nothing would keep them apart.

For Elizabeth, there was still some doubt that her brother would tire of her or use this to get back at her. If Elizabeth was totally honest with herself she already knew the answer and had already subconsciously decided that her brother would be only one to ever enter her.

Sara, had loved her little brother since she could hold her little brother. They may only be 11 months between them, still she would hug her little brother always, until he started getting beats from her father. At first her love for Darmon was one of a brother and sister, but that changed after she witnessed how loving he was to the others. Now, Sara was as committed to making her relationship with Darmon stronger.

As for Jade, at first she was appalled at what her grandmother had asked them. Jade watched her cousin to see how he interacted and how he marveled at learning new things. Jade's mindset changed overtime and she could understand how her aunt Evelyn felt. Jade thought how hurt her cousin would feel, if after getting her affections, then telling him she didn't want to continue with him; this caused a pang in her chest. Jade couldn't or wouldn't do that to her cousin.

As for the older mother and daughter pair, Agatha had already decided this is where she belonged, and if that meant having her grandson between her legs to make him feel loved then that was a small price to pay. 'What small price?' Agatha thought to herself, she knew it wasn't a small price and in fact it was what she wanted.

Lynette, initially, thought her mother had gone crazy when she asked her to seduce and teach the boy. Lynette didn't even need to seduce her nephew. Darmon was starved for affection and practically jumped at the chance. Lynette as did her daughter, Jade, hesitate and was glad that her mother didn't force her to act straight away. Getting to know her nephew opened her eyes to how much love the young man had and wasn't afraid to express it, even if they were just small pecks on the cheek or hugs. Lynette saw that Amber was stricken hard by the love bug and didn't understand how or even why, so waited and watched. Lynette after that first night with her nephew no longer had any doubts what-so-ever.

"So, to confirm, aunt Evelyn. Will you take your son's virginity today? After that then we are all free to lose our own virginity to him..." Amber asked.

It was Agatha that responded, "In principle, yes, sweetie. I already know that Evelyn will have her son this night. But, before we all jump my poor child's bones. I think an order should be decided and also we will need to have a talk with Darmon. It will covers if he is happy for this in his life and also about pregnancies."

"Yes, mom. I will see my son this evening. I will not tell him about pregnancies until we have a family meeting. As for not keeping any secrets in this family, it should be noted that I'm ovulating and will be making sure my son floods my womb only." This statement caused some of the women to look up in surprise and made Amber jealous also.

The women's meeting came to end after this and everyone went to go find Darmon to have fun.

Darmon was once again in his room, down to his boxers and sitting on the bed facing the door. Darmon had now been with all his family bar his mother, he was pondering if his mother would indeed join him tonight.

There was light knock on Darmon's bedroom door, "Come in." Darmon didn't know who it could be since everyone had been given permission to just enter his room.

Darmon was surprised and equally excited with a hint of scared, that his mother did indeed come to his room. Darmon got up to kiss his mother and Evelyn accepted this gratefully. After the kiss ended, "Honey, before we do what you have done with the others. Can we have a talk first?" Evelyn asked. Evelyn lead her son to his bed and sat down, pulling him to sit besides her, "Honey, we will get to the fun things soon, but there are some important things that we have to discuss."

Darmon sat besides his mother and waited for her to continue, "You have learned some sexual things from your aunt and grandma, and put them into action with your cousins and sisters. I hope you have enjoyed that. I can tell you that they all love you and want what's best for you."

"Well, I love them too and love what aunt Lynette and grandma have taught me," Darmon responded smiling at his mother.

Evelyn smiled at her son too, paused for a few seconds before continuing, "Today, I will also be teaching about sexual intercourse. This is where a male will insert their penis or cock into a female's vagina, in this case it will be your cock and my vagina. There is a reason why it falls on me to teach you this. As your mother and to atone for any pain I might have caused you, this act is a way for us to bond and make that bond stronger."

"I know that you've never had sexual intercourse before, and as such you are a virgin. For the record your cousins and sisters are also virgins."

"For both male and female their virginity can only be given away once. For a male, when a penis enters a vagina for the first time it would mean they have lost their virginity. For females, it is a little different, they usually have a piece of skin, that is called a hymen, that is a shield to protect the vagina, and when a male insert his penis and breaks this skin, there maybe some blood, that act alone means that the female has lost her virginity."

"You probably notices that your aunt and grandma's vagina's were a lot more open, right? That is because they have had a penis enter them before and the that barrier that protects the vagina is gone. Since, I have been with your father, I am also not a virgin."

Evelyn smiled and chuckled, "We women talk a lot about you and our own bodies. You probably noticed that your sister, Elizabeth, was a lot more open. Sometimes,

girls might accidentally break their hymen via various different methods, but still haven't had a penis enter them, so can still be called virgins."

Evelyn asked her son, "Do you understand, so far, and have any questions?"

Darmon pondered for a moment then asked, "You said that when the hymen breaks it could lead to blood. I don't want to hurt anymore."

Evelyn was surprised and proud, that her son was thinking of his cousins and sisters and didn't want to hurt them. Evelyn continued to smile at her son, "Honey, it is good that you are thinking of their well being. Every woman that wants to have sexual intercourse will have to face that. The female is prepared for this, initial, discomfort because they know that the pleasure they will get afterwards is well worth it. I'm pretty sure they all want to have sexual intercourse with you, if you want that with them of course."

Evelyn paused to let the information sink in before she continued with the lesson, "There are two types of sexual intercourse and going forward both will be referred to as sex, this is a short name version for sexual intercourse."

"The first type is called making love; making love is the tender form of sex between consenting partners. This form will most likely be slow and steady with a lot more emotions mixed in."

"The second form is called fucking or to be fucked; this form is more primal where partners lose control of themselves and want to just experience pleasure. For our first time, I would like us to make love and after that first time, if you still desire me then we can fuck to our hearts content. Just know that always for the first time with a partner, go for making love. Anytime after that your partner will likely tell you how you should have sex with them."

Darmon nodded in understanding as his mouth suddenly went dry. "Now, I know that if we followed the same methods you have used with everyone so far, then we would both be having a mutual masturbation session and oral sex. At least for today, I would like your semen or cum to always be inside my vagina, so I will not be giving you a blowjob to let you orgasm into my mouth or use my hand to stroke you until you orgasm."

"I know you might be disappointed in that, but I can promise you that the pleasure you will receive will outweigh the disappointment. That is not to say that I will turn down you eating my pussy until I orgasm, in fact I would welcome that. Let's get undressed now, honey. So that we can both see each other," Evelyn confirmed.

Darmon and his mother both got up from the bed, stripped off their clothes before melting into each other's arms, where gentle kissing turned into passionate French kissing. Darmon was hard as a rock and Evelyn's pussy was leaking a lot.

Breaking the kiss Evelyn asked her son, "Honey, will you please lick and eat mommy's pussy." Darmon didn't wait to be told twice and used the gentle kisses, nibbles and licks as he was taught. He had been getting better at this with each of his family. Now he was using all the skills he learned on his mother.

Evelyn was amazed at her son's technique and the first swipe of his tongue against her pussy slit sent her over the top. Evelyn didn't know if it was how her son did it or the taboo nature of it all, but the heightened arousal had her squirting onto her son's face, this was a first for her, as her husband had never made her cum this hard before even when they had a very active sex life, prior to the kids being born.

Darmon enjoyed making his mother squirt, and didn't allow his mother any rest before he had his tongue in her vagina, and with long swipes attacked her clitoris. Evelyn has never been able to cum twice in a row this quick before and was a little jealous that the other women had, most likely, already experienced the same thing and she was the last to experience it. Evelyn, at this moment, wanted her son only for herself, but she knew she couldn't be a bitch to the others as it was up to her son. Evelyn knew that she was his mother, but also a member of his harem.

After cumming a third time, in less than 10 minutes, Evelyn pushed her son's head away, "Please, darling... *pant* I can't... *pant* anymore. Give me a few minutes then we will make love. My god, honey, mommy loves you so much. I've never felt so much pleasure before, you're amazing, my sweet handsome man."

"Honey, I'm going to wet your cock with my mouth and then I will straddle your hips, where I will take your cock into my body, into my vagina. Are you ready for this?" Evelyn asked, hoping her son was ready for this, since she certainly was.

Darmon lay down on his back at his mother's gentle nudge. Evelyn moved her head to her son's lap and took him into her mouth, giving him a couple of up and down movements before popping her son out of her mouth then licking his shaft. Darmon was moaning as his mother did this. Once Evelyn could see he was wet enough, moved over to position herself in the cowgirl position, she lifted up a little, took her son's cock in her hand and pointed it upwards.

Evelyn looked into her son's eyes before she pushed his glans to just rest outside her vagina. Both mother and son, looked down to see his cock slowly penetrate his mother's vagina. Evelyn screamed as she took her son inside her, this scared Darmon a little but when his mother didn't pull off him he relaxed. It had been over 18 years since Evelyn had anything close to something entering her that wasn't plastic, and the intrusion felt like she was a virgin all over again. Maybe she was, Evelyn thought, her husband's cock only ever measured 5 inches hard and was pretty thin; her son felt like a baseball bat was being shoved into her.

The loud scream could be heard by all the women and nearly had some of them out of bed, ready to run to make sure everything was okay, but quickly went back to bed as they heard, "OH YES YES YES MY SWEET BABY HAS COME HOME." If some of the women had doubts before that Evelyn would go through with this they were dashed, and knew that Darmon had indeed become a full adult.

Darmon felt the tight velvet folds of his mother's vagina wrap around him, it was like nothing he'd ever felt before. Yes, being inside the mouths of his family was great,

but this was just something else entirely. Evelyn once she had settled fully onto her son shaft, wait for her cunt to adjust to his size. Evelyn looked up from where mother and son were joined into the eyes of her son, who in turn had a wonderful expression on his face. Evelyn leaned down and whispered into her son's ear, "Welcome home, darling. I'm going to start moving soon and you're free to do anything you want to me. You can grab and fondle my tits, ass and mark me as yours."

Evelyn lifted herself up and started a steady up and down movement. Evelyn started to pant hard, whilst her son grabbed her ass moaning in pure pleasure. Soon, Evelyn, started to move faster and harder, as she sensed her son was nearing his own release, "OH YES *PANT* MY *PANT* DARLING. YOU MAKE *PANT* MOMMY FEEL LOVED *MOAN* AND WANTED."

As Darmon neared his own release he started to say loudly, "OH MOMMY... *MOAN* MMOMMMMMMMMM!!!!!" Darmon started to cum inside his mother and this set off Evelyn into a mind blowing orgasm of her own, "YES YES... *PANT* *MOAN* FILL MOMMY'S PUSSY BABY."

Evelyn collapsed onto her son's chest, both were panting heavily catching their breath, "Oh darling, you are wonderful. I love you so much." Evelyn to her surprise noticed that her son hadn't gone down at all. Had it been his father, he would have come in minutes and be done for rest of the night.

Darmon, held on to his mother and rolled her over so she was on her back and started to push in and out of his mother, "Honey, that first time was us making love, now I want you to fuck me." Darmon didn't need to be asked twice and started to really give his mother deep strokes with his cock. "YES DARLING... *PANT* FUCK YOUR *MOAN* MOMMY *PANT* FUCK ME *MOAN* BABY."

Darmon was grunting and panting as he railed his mother. Evelyn came again and screamed her pleasure, "OH MY GOD... I'M CUMMING... I'M CUMMING!!!!!" After Evelyn came down from her orgasm, she could already feel another one building, "DARLING, HARDER FASTER. MAKE MOMMY CUM AGAIN. MARK ME AS YOURS!" Darmon moved his head down to his mother neck and kissed, sucked and nibbled

on the right side and then to the left side. Evelyn pussy clenched around her son's cock again as she came. Darmon pushed his cock in as deep as he could and let spurt after spurt of his sperm enter his mother. Evelyn screamed again, "MOMMY LOVES *MOAN* FEELING HER BABY *PANT* CUM INSIDE HER."

That night, neither mother or son got much sleep, Darmon took his mother against the bedroom wall, whilst he held his mother up and her legs wrapped around his waist. Evelyn just screamed her pleasure every time she or her son would cum. After a brief rest in bed, Darmon even fucked his mother whilst spooning her. After this they were spent and managed to get a few hours sleep.

The others didn't get much sleep either hearing the screams of pleasure Evelyn was experiencing. Each and everyone of them had masturbated to several orgasms listen to mother and son pleasure each other. It was Agatha who had cum three times this night, smiled and thanked god that things were going the way she wanted. Agatha had cum more times in the last few weeks than she had in the last 10 or so years.

The mother and son pair, woke up and fucked again in the morning, they were just grateful that no one had come to try and wake them. Darmon and Evelyn even showered together, where one thing lead to another and both had another mind blowing fuck to orgasm.

When they eventually walked into the dinning room, they were greeted by sleepy family members. Evelyn looked shy and Darmon had the look of a cat that ate the canary. It was Amber that got up to greet the pair as she had noticed a trail of her cousin's cum running down her aunt's leg. Amber greeted her boyfriend with a French kiss and then moved over to her aunt to whisper in her ear, "Auntie, forgive me," before leaning down and scooped up the cum from her aunt's leg, got up and popped her finger covered in cum into her mouth. Evelyn was shocked and surprised at her niece's action and before she could say anything, gave her aunt a quick peck on the lips, giggling said, "Thank, aunt Evelyn, that is tasty."

Lynette who witnessed this coughed up the coffee that she had just taken a swig of and the younger women had dropped whatever they had in hand looking at the what just happened. It was Agatha who laughed so loud that brought them all back down to earth.

Agatha whilst still laughing, "I don't think we need to be told how things went last night. I'm sure the house down the road heard Evelyn's pleasure. Now, I would take this to the pool house for a discussion but with everyone here already we can have a family meeting here."

Agatha waited for her grandson and daughter-in-law to get some food before getting the meeting started, "My sweet child, you've now experienced what it means to be with a woman and you've now become a full grown adult man. How do you feel about experiencing that with the rest of us? I know for a fact that they all want to experience that with you."

"Not going to lie, grandma. That was so good, I want to do that again with mom and you all. Is it different with different women?" Darmon asked really wanting to know if he could do this with everyone and would it feel different if he was with someone else.

"Yes, honey. All women feel different in someway or another. Some might be tighter or some may feel different inside," Lynette confirmed.

"Well, if mom is okay with it, then I would like to try," Darmon said whilst looking at his mother.

"Oh my sweet baby. While I would be lying if I said I wouldn't love to have you all to myself, but I knew that when we started this I was going to have to share your love with everyone. So I'm happy for you give them as much pleasure as you gave me last night, to them."

Agatha smiled and knew this was hard for Evelyn as she had just experienced the one true thing she had been missing all her life. Agatha gently placed her hand over her daughter-in-law's and gently squeezed, "Darmon, my sweet child. There is an important thing we need to discuss before you can continue with this. It is important that you know about pregnancies. When a man orgasms inside a woman without using any birth control, there is a chance that the female could become pregnant with their child. It should be noted that none of us are on birth control of any kind. I'm too old to get pregnant, but everyone else could easily fall pregnant."

"Now, the choice of getting pregnant is up to the partner you are with that day. If they don't want to get pregnant and ask you to pull out before you ejaculate then honor their wishes," Lynette continued.

"Darling, we had unprotected sex last night, and it was my choice as I feel I want to get pregnant with your child," Evelyn had just confirmed what Darmon was thinking.

"Mom, you want to have my baby?" Darmon asked.

"No, honey. I want us to have our baby. I know I should have asked you before hand if you were okay with having a child with your own mother, but this was something that I needed," Evelyn confessed.

"Well, we could open the debate on this here, but I feel this should be something you discuss in private with your partner prior to any sex taking place, although I can already tell how that talk will go for some of us," Agatha said. "Well the next thing to decide is the order for your girlfriends to become your women in. Jade, sweetie. Can you go get the playing cards?"

"Okay!" Jade got up and brought the playing card from the living room and handed them to her grandma.

"I will shuffle the pack, lay the cards face down on the table and each one with the exception of Evelyn will pick a card at random. The order will be decided by the playing card you pick, Ace being the highest and for any duplicate numbers then those women pick again," Agatha confirmed the rules for this order game. "Evelyn, darling. I only excluded you since you just had your time with your son, and it would be fair to allow the other's the chance, the order after that will remain the same even should Darmon add to his harem later, they will just fall behind you."

Everyone just nodded and picked a card, the order was left to complete random chance. Lynette got a king, Amber a Jack, Sara an nine, Agatha a seven, Elizabeth a five, and Jade who looked upset a two.

As Darmon's harem was forming, his father sat in his office.

"Arraahh. Why did that bastard run away. Maybe, I should have put a chain around his neck and bolted it to the basement wall," Jacob was mumbling to himself.

"Where the fuck is my whore of a wife and why the fuck did she take my daughters?" Jacob said out loud in his office.

"I've searched for them and can't find them. I was so close, Elizabeth just to get praise from me would have opened her legs for me. I was so close to fucking the shit out of her," Jacob mused.

'Sara, I would have had to force, but once she had tasted her daddy's cock would have yielded quickly enough. The bastard's whore wouldn't have the balls to stop me, especially, after I cut up her son in front of her,' Jacob chuckled at the thought.

"I need to get laid to relief this stress I'm feeling. If the bastard was around, I could've fucked the whore ass until it bleed and then taken extra pleasure in torturing the boy," Jacob laughed out at what he would have done.

Business for Jacob hadn't been going smoothly, lately, as he had lost focus; the focus he got after fucking his whorish wife's ass and beating the bastard. Jacob missed both.

A memory of a few years ago brought a smile to Jacob's face:

Martin the ass, came to Jacob one day with a proposal. "Jacob, listen Agatha and your sister really want to take Darmon off your hands. Your sister and I, would gladly take him and adopt him as our own son."

"Why would I do that, Martin? He's Evelyn's son and it would break her heart to see the boy go," Jacob responded.

'Evelyn's son and not yours,' Martin thought, but he already knew what Jacob thought of his son and the reason why his wife and mother-in-law pestered him to do something.

"Listen, we've been business partners for years, and I'm willing to sign over my shares to you, to ensure that you let Darmon be adopted by Lynette and I," Martin said. They were brother-in-laws and been in business for so long, Martin trusted any deal they made and had even made a contract to that effect.

"So you're saying you would give me your shares in the company?" Jacob wanted to confirm.

"Yes, the shares that Lynette owns are hers and not subject to any deal we make here," Martin said.

"I take it you've written up the contract already, right? Let me have a look at it," Jacob inquired. Martin, opened his briefcase and handed the contract to Jacob, who read the contract which stated that, for the transfer of shares from Mr. Martin Masters to Mr. Jacob Preston, with the condition that the child named Darmon was to be given to Mr. Martin Masters and Mrs. Lynette Masters, to be legally adopted by them. Two contracts were each signed by both parties, and each kept a copy of the contract.

"Martin, I will need time to make it right with Evelyn, which shouldn't be a problem. I will draw up my own contract to release the boy to you. Can you come over to my house in 2 days time to finalize everything?" Jacob asked with Martin agreeing.

"Well, I'm off now, Jacob. I need to tell your sister the news," Martin replied, then put the contract into his briefcase before leaving the office for home.

Jacob thought, with Martin's shares in his name, he would hold forty five percent of the company and started to rub his hands together. 'Do I really want to give up my stress reliever,' Jacob thought. Then had an evil thought, 'If I can keep both then all the better right?'

Instead of going home that night to torture the boy, Jacob decided to make some phone calls and then scanned in the signed contract. Jacob then re-typed the contract where the condition to release Darmon were removed and used photo-shop to add the signatures.

On the day that Martin was due to come over, Jacob laughed recalling it now, an accident happened that drove Martin off the road killing him and setting fire to his car. Of course, Jacob played the concerned brother-in-law and even attended the funeral to pay his respects, whilst inwardly chuckling to himself.

It was a few months after that that Lynette went to see her brother about the contract and the release of Darmon. Jacob denied that the contract included the release of the boy and showed her the modified contract that read that Martin was tired of the business and wanted Jacob to run things and would transfer his shares as such, with

Lynette shares unaffected. This kicked off a big argument and without the real signed contract that was believed to have burnt in the car fire, Lynette couldn't prove anything.

Jacob laughed out loud after recalling the memory and said out aloud, "I need to get laid..."

Let's just say that over the next week, none of the family members, got enough sleep. Darmon after experiencing sex for the first time, was hooked.

Darmon made love to his aunt for the first time, they must have fucked 7 times that night. As per his grandmother's request, Darmon did ask his aunt if she was okay with unprotected sex. Lynette really didn't give a fuck, if she got pregnant then it

was the gods will that it happened. Lynette screams were on par with Evelyn's and never once regretted doing this with her nephew.

During the night, as her nephew slept, Lynette was deep in thought:

'I'm sorry, Martin. I've let another man enter where only you were permitted.'

'I know you wouldn't want me to stay celibate, but could you forgive me or accept it knowing it was the son we were going to adopt?'

'Martin, not only has our son conquered me, he's conquered our daughter also. Can you believe it, Amber, fell in love and got hit hard by the love bug?'

'Could you accept it knowing that Jade will fall for our son also?'

'I'm sorry, Martin, but I love him. I admit it's a different love than what we shared, but it's a unique love, in it's own way.'

'*Chuckle* I thought you were big, Martin, and being with you was fulfilling. Our son, is longer and thicker than you and boy does he know how to use it after being taught by his own mother.'

'I hope you're looking down from above and laughing at me, at us.'

As her nephew slept, Lynette leaned over and gently kissed his forehead, then his nose before giving him a loving peck that lingered a few seconds longer than a normal aunt and nephew peck should have been. There was no denying that Lynette felt love for this young man, who had turned all their lives upside down.

The next morning as Darmon and his aunt came to breakfast the maids also looked at them blushing.

When it was Amber's turn next, she asked her cousin and boyfriend to sit beside her.

"Babe, you know I'm a virgin. I believe aunt Evelyn explained that to you. I've heard you having sex, with your mother and mine. I can't promise the same level of excitement as them. When you take my virginity, I would likely bleed and be sore afterwards. what I mean is that we may only experience sex a few times tonight and maybe after some sleep to rest my pussy we could do it again in the morning. I just don't want you to be disappointed."

Darmon instead of answering her directly, put his hand against her face and tenderly kissed her, "Just being with you and what you're willing to give up for me is something I would like very much."

Amber smiled at her cousin, gave him a quick kiss then continued, "If I'm too sore after for more sex, I can always use my hands or mouth to pleasure you until you're satisfied. Just know that after I recover, my body will be yours and you can have sex with me anytime you want. The only condition I would like to impose is that you have your first time with everyone before we have more sex after tonight. This should help towards my recovery, ready to take you inside me again."

"I don't want to hurt you, Amber," Darmon said concerned for his cousin.

Amber was so happy that Darmon was worried about her, "You silly man. I've wanted to give myself to someone that I love and have a connection with. You are my boyfriend and cousin, so meet both conditions."

What followed was Darmon and Amber, falling onto the bed, facing each other as they kissed and pawed at each other clothes to remove them, "Babe, you will need to lick and eat my pussy to make sure it is really wet, then I will do what aunt Evelyn did and take you into me from the top, that way I should be able to control how I lose my virginity. You can cum in me, while I don't think I'm ready to be a mother, I will welcome our child if you do manage to impregnate me."

Darmon, used all the foreplay techniques he had learned to make sure Amber was wet. Amber indeed did orgasm twice before, she felt ready, "Babe, I'm ready."

Amber, straddled her cousin's hips and lifted his cock up and placed him at the entrance to her vagina. Amber lowered herself down to take the head of his cock into her body, and when Darmon was nudging her hymen, Amber had a hint of fear.

Darmon watched as his cock entered his cousin's vagina and looked up when Amber pushed down a little wincing at the pain she felt. Darmon was starting to get worried and was about to pull Amber off his cock when she let her weight fall and a third of his cock entered her breaking her hymen. Amber screamed, but it wasn't a scream of pleasure as his mother and aunt had, no this was a scream of pain. Both Amber and Darmon looked down and blood trickle down his shaft. Amber still in pain waited for herself to adjust to his size and let the pain subside.

All the women, knew when they heard the scream that Amber had lost her virginity. The women who were still virgins were a little scared, but those that weren't smiled and fingered their pussies to orgasm.

Darmon was engulfed in a tight embrace, her vagina had a death grip on his cock and he wouldn't be able to even move a millimeter, even if he wanted to. It took over 3 minutes before Amber was able to relax her vagina and Darmon slide in another few inches. After every few inches, Amber waited to adjust to Darmon's cock, until she was fully impaled on his cock.

"Look, babe. I've got you fully inside me," Amber said with pride in her voice. Darmon looked down and could see he was balls deep in his cousin. He decided to play with Amber's breasts, fondling them, kissing and licking her nipples and gentle pulling her nipples in-between his teeth, this caused Amber to relax more and moan loudly. Amber started the the up / down / in / out motion and built up speed as she started to feel more pleasure than any discomfort.

"OH YES... *PANT* MY GOD... *MOAN* I FEEL SO... *PANT* *PANT* FULL," Amber yelled.

Darmon was the first to lose the battle, Amber's tightness was just too much for him and he screamed, "I'M CUMMING... *MOAN* INSIDE YOU *PANT*."

Less than 30 seconds later, Amber also climaxed and exhausted fell onto Darmon's chest. Darmon spent this time, still hard inside his cousin, to tenderly kiss and make sure he marked her as he had started to like doing to his women.

Darmon rolled his cousin onto her back without popping out of her and proceeded to make love to her in the missionary position. Three times Amber climaxed, before her cousin deposited another huge load deep inside her. Amber was indeed sore after that and couldn't take another round so asked if they could stop for the night and get some sleep. Darmon didn't mind that he didn't fuck Amber as many times as he did his own mother and his aunt. Darmon embraced Amber and sleep came to them both quickly.

In the morning, Amber saw the mess they had made of the bed and saw the blood stains, this didn't stop her from feeling horny and sucked Darmon's cock until it was hard, then got him to fuck her in the missionary position again, both moaned loudly in passion. The usual shower that he had with the women after spending the night was somber and Amber asked for patience as her pussy was very sore, so wouldn't allow her cousin to touch it.

When Amber and Darmon entered the dinning room, everyone clapped and cheered the lovebirds. Amber blushed and even hid behind Darmon, whereas Darmon just shrugged his shoulders.

When Amber saw the maids Helen and Alice, she moved to them and whispered, "hmm, sorry... but Darmon's bed is a mess. Sorry, if this causes you additional problems or embarrassment." The maids just smiled, blushed and nodded to let her know it was okay.

Darmon already knew that it was his sister, Sara's turn that night and had been looking forward to it.

When Sara entered his room she was scared and made no move to come closer, Darmon had to take the lead. Going to Sara and leading her to his bed, Darmon gently sat his sister besides him.

"Sis, I can see you're scared and I don't want to hurt someone that I care about. If you don't want to go through with this then I understand, but I still hope we can continue doing the other things. Who knows maybe when you feel ready we can try again," Darmon assured his sister, Sara.

Sara's thought were rattling inside her head:

'My little brother is giving me a way out. Should I take him up on it?'

'No, I can't do that to the others. If I don't, then things kinda stop for them.'

'My little brother loves me enough to not want to do something I'm not ready for.'

'Am I not ready for this? I mean, I want it, but I'm a virgin. Amber screamed and would be sore for days afterwards.'

'Would my little brother love me less than those that go through with this?'

Sara in the end made a silent decision, "I love that you care enough about my feelings, and saw that I was scared. You gave me a way out, for that I am grateful. This wasn't a test to see if you only wanted sex with me and didn't care about my feelings."

Darmon just smiled at his sister. Sara continued, "I now know that I means more to you than adding another notch on your belt, and for that I want to continue with this; being your girlfriend as well as your big sister."

Darmon was puzzled, "Another notch? I don't understand."

Sara laughed at this, "Little brother, you have claimed our mother, our aunt Lynette and our cousin Amber. Heck, even though you haven't had sex with grandma, yet, I feel she is already yours. All these, some could say are your conquests that you've add to your collection. Was I just going to be another one added to the collection without actually caring for me or them?"

Darmon was shocked, "Sis, I love them and you all, and would never do anything to hurt any of you. You're not conquests or 'another notch' at all. I didn't give you a way out, I just didn't want to hurt you, and you to not fear me or be scared of me."

Sara suddenly kissed her brother, which lasted for at least five minutes. After Sara broke the kiss to catch her breath and to quiet her beating heart, "And that little brother is why I love you, and want you to make me yours."

Darmon moved to embrace his sister and whispered in her ear, "If you feel uncomfortable or want me to stop, just tell me and I will immediately. I stand by what I said, I will not hurt any of you."

This made, Sara grab his face with both hands, look deep into his eyes seeking any deception and finding none, French kissed her little brother. They soon were pawing at each other clothes until both were naked and panting. They fell onto the bed facing each other. "Listen, sis. When Amber lost her virginity to me, she decided to straddle my hips and take me in at her own pace. We could do it that way or I could do it with me on top and seeing your reaction as I enter your body."

"I've discussed this with Amber and the others and feel that letting me control it would be best," Sara confirmed how she wanted to proceed.

"You know grandma's request, how do you feel about me cumming inside you?" Darmon asked.

"Truthfully, I don't want to be a mother just yet. If I ask you to pull out will you do so?" Sara said.

"Of course, sis. I won't do anything against your wishes," Darmon assured his sister.

"Good, having said that if you do manage to get me pregnant then I can guarantee, I will love and cherish our child." Darmon smiled and kissed his sister again after she told her brother how she felt.

Let's just say that it went pretty much the same way as Amber's initiation, only Sara cried, in addition to her scream, as she lost her virginity and this made Darmon scared that he had hurt her too much and spent ages, kissing his sister's tears away. In the end a little brother made a big sister into a woman. As it turned out Sara never did ask her brother to pull out, but she was so sore and could only manage to have sex with her brother three times that night and morning.

After having a shower together they entered the dinning room. As soon as Sara saw everyone in the room, including the maids, clapping and cheering, she got all shy and wouldn't look at anyone directly. Sara's face was a bright red and burning.

Agatha knew she was next and got up after breakfast and walked over to her grandson, moved her head down to kiss his cheek, then whispered into his ear, "You've made you mom, your aunt, your cousin and now your sister yours. I'm already yours and will prove it this evening, my handsome grandson, no my handsome boyfriend." This caused Darmon to mirror his sister Sara, in having a bright burning face. Agatha just got up and moved away, laughing loudly.

Agatha sent a message to the women's only group, it simply read 'Women only meeting in the pool house in 30 minutes.'

As per the request all the females attended the meeting.

Agatha, started the meeting, "For starters, this isn't about anything that has happened with Darmon and any of us. Or about what will happen tonight."

Everyone looked at Agatha with some confusion on their faces, "Okay, maybe not directly anything to do with my grandson. I had a previous meeting with Evelyn, where she has expressed that she wants to divorce my son, and this meeting is to discuss this."

Agatha looked over at Elizabeth and Sara, "I know this may be hard for you both, sweeties, after all he is your father. I will tell you now that I value your mother and you both over my son."

It was Elizabeth who spoke first, "Grandma, mom. I know I was the one who was always seeking my father's attention. Yes, you could say they were 'daddy' issues and I just wanted his attention. I now know this was shallow and he didn't really love me and was using me. I saw how he treated, my brother and mom. I even hated Sara for not backing me. I now know I was wrong, especially, after he nearly killed Darmon. I don't feel the love that I once thought was only for me. I now know where or who I should be loving. If you're asking if it would bother me if mom and dad, divorced then I would answer 'No'."

Once, Elizabeth had finished and didn't look like she would continue, Sara added, "For me, I've loved my mom, brother and sister more than my father. I said brother then sister for a reason, only because you never did listen to me when I kept tell you it was wrong. I don't resent you for that, sis. In fact, I love you, for being here with us instead of with dad. I don't love dad at all, for what he has done to this family, not just us, but both grandma and our aunt's family. If mom wants a divorce then all I will say is what do you need me to do."

Agatha smiled, "Well, I suspect that Jacob is getting antsy with not having found Darmon, his wife and daughters. Evelyn, dear, knowing Jacob can I assume there was a pre-nup in place, right?"

"Yes, mom. Initially, it favored Jacob heavily in that as part of business dealing he was allowed to date and entertain business clients accordingly, there was a clause that if I didn't approve and divorced him or for infidelity then I get nothing. Before I agreed to the marriage I got another, infidelity, clause added that stated that if Jacob was cheating on our marriage vows, then it was a seventy thirty split of assets in my favor. The act of infidelity must have solid proof and indisputable if it went to court," Evelyn confirmed.

Agatha nodded, "Well, it's a good thing that none of us will ever reveal your relationship with your son. What we need is idea's for how this divorce will benefit Evelyn over Jacob."

"Mom, don't get me wrong, if it means that I get away from him and stay with everyone here then I'm willing to accept nothing, but would prefer if I can take him to the cleaners," Evelyn confessed.

"Grandma, uncle Jacob is still your son. Are you sure that you want to do this as it will likely destroy him," Amber asked.

"Sweetie, while it is true he is of my flesh and blood, and I wouldn't want any major harm to come to him, he has for the last 13 years subjected his own flesh and blood to torture. For that I cannot forgive him. So the table is open for ideas," Agatha responded, fully knowing that she wanted her son to suffer as much as her grandson did.

"Mom, could we employ a private investigator to follow him to find, document and record any infidelity for grounds for divorce?" Lynette suggested.

"That is one possible solution, but he might just be able to play that off as business dealings as per the pre-nup," Agatha said, after a moments thought.

"Hmm... well what if..." Amber started but stopped as she wasn't sure how to proceed further.

"Sweetie, any suggestion regardless of it being stupid or genius will not be disregarded," Agatha coxed.

"Well, what if we make it happen... I mean, if we can find someone who would be willing to sleep with uncle and record it," Amber said in a hurry.

"That is not a stupid idea, sweetie. I don't know who we can get to do that and I doubt anyone here will volunteer," Agatha said jokingly.

"Ohhh, uuuummm... I will if it means that... I'm willing to sacrifice... myself for this. God, knows I've hurt mom and Darmon all these years," Elizabeth blurted out quickly.

Everyone had shocked expressions and it was Agatha who exploded, "ABSOLUTELY NOT!" Then in a more calmer voice still edged in rage, "Sweetie, I will not allow you to sacrifice yourself for this. No one here will ask that of you, besides you're your brother's girlfriend, right? How do you think he would feel knowing his father would be having sex with his girlfriend?"

"I'm sorry, grandma," Elizabeth said before sobbing, she knew how it would have gone down for the women here and for her brother, who would later find out she had let the one man he hated the most have what was his. It was stupid, stupid of her to even suggest it.

"Mom, I've got some slutty friends that might be able to help with Amber's suggestion, but there is likely going to be some price attached to it. What that price is, may not always be monetary," Lynette said following the near blowup of Elizabeth trying to play her part in all this.

"Mom, maybe we can combine both, the PI and one of Lynette's friend. I mean the person we find has to seduce Jacob and then eventually have sex with him. The PI could record all interactions to build a strong case, including the actual sexual act," Evelyn suggested.

"Now, that is a good idea, darling. Lynette do you have any particle friend that might go through with this plan?" Agatha asked.

"Yeah, mom. I think I've got someone that might fit the bill," Lynette assured the women here.

"Mom, we should employ a PI to investigate Jacob's pattern, so that Lynette's friend could easily get close to him," Evelyn also suggested.

"Good suggestion, darling. I think we have the makings of a plan. Lynette call the PI that found Darmon and see if they would take this on. If there is nothing else to discuss then this meeting is now concluded," Agatha said to close this meeting.

Darmon was waiting for his grandma to arrive sitting on the bed facing the door. The door opened and in walked his naked grandma, she was stunningly beautiful in his eyes. Darmon's mouth opened to say something but nothing would come out. Agatha chuckled at this. 'You still got it, Agatha. You can still make men speechless,' she thought to herself, 'Or at least the one man that mattered to her,' she finished her thought with.

Agatha swayed over towards her grandson and then sat besides him. Agatha rested her hand over her grandson's right knee, gently stroking. Darmon got hard instantly and moved to kiss his grandmother who stopped him with a finger against his lips, "My sweet child, we will get to that soon, but there are somethings that I need to tell you first."

Darmon wanted to get things moving, but then remembered how Sara thought he only wanted sex from her, so moved back and waited patiently. Agatha noted this with a smile, she also knew this might be frustrating for her grandson, because she had teased him at breakfast.

The fact that he didn't force the matter had Agatha confessing to herself that had her grandson pushed it she would have relented and had this talk later. Agatha was just amazed at how much her grandson was learning, to control himself and to empathize with all his harem members. Agatha chuckled as she realized it can't be easy for her grandson with all the different personalities of the women surrounding him.

"My sweet child, your mother is looking to divorce your father, this is where your mother and father would permanently separate. Your mother no longer has any love for your father and only wants you as her man. There is a contract between your mother and father that states that if your mother has sex with another man then she will lose everything, the house you lived in and also any possessions they owned jointly," Agatha stated.

Darmon was shocked, "No, mom lost everything because we made love, and then we continued to have sex."

"No, my sweet child, there is no proof that you had or are having an intimate relationship with your mother. Your father will need proof of this and I can tell you that none of us will ever reveal that, so rest easy. The contract between your parents states that if your mother cheats on your father then your mother gets nothing, but if your father cheats on your mother then she get over two thirds of any wealth they shared, which includes the house, cars and anything else," Agatha revealed.

Agatha paused and didn't know if she should reveal the next part, but remembered her stance on the no more secrets in this family, "So one of the suggested methods was to lure your father into a trap, where evidence could be documented that your father was indeed cheating on your mother. Of course, getting someone we can firstly find and trust would be difficult. Your sister, Elizabeth, offered herself as a sacrifice to obtain that evidence. She was willing to let your father have sex with her for the sake of you and your mother."

Darmon suddenly stood up, ready to go to his sister's room. He didn't know if it was to end it with her or comfort her. Agatha grabbed his hand as he went to leave, "My sweet child, please sit down there is more to tell."

Darmon reluctantly sat down, his heart was racing and Agatha saw he was taking deep breaths, "It should be noted that, I and everyone else was absolutely against that idea. Elizabeth knows she is your girlfriend, but was willing to do this for you and your mother. So don't hold this against your sister, she was willing to do this for you. Elizabeth is already suffering from even suggesting it and the reactions she got from us all. In the end, a friend of your aunt's might be able to help with this. Your aunt is arranging a meeting with her friend, but your aunt confirmed that the price for this might not be money and what she might want is not known, I just hope she accepts a large sum of money."

"For now, I will hire a private investigator to check out your father's habit and movements. It will help integrate your aunt's friend, so she can seduce and bed your father, the private investigator will record this for evidence. I know I've dumped a lot on you this evening. If you feel that you're no longer in the mood, then that's fine. I just needed to get this off my chest. I promised you that I will not keep secrets from you."

"Thank you grandma, for telling me. I was upset and angry with Elizabeth, and was ready to confront her. Depending on that, I would have either never wanted anything to do with her ever again or comforted her," Darmon replied in a voice that told Agatha that if he did breakup with his sister, then it wasn't just two people who would suffer.

"For the record, your sister would have been devastated had you broke up with her. So, do you want me to leave for this evening, my sweet child?" Agatha asked, hoping he would like her to stay.

"No, I wouldn't like that. You have certainly dulled the mood a little, but not enough to kill it, grandma. Are you ready to let your grandson bed you? Today, I'm actually glad you're not a virgin, I don't think I could see another crying face due to them losing their virginity. That hurts me just as much as it hurt them."

Agatha giggled, "Who say I won't be crying when you enter me for the first time, my handsome young man. I'm pretty sure I will be crying, but those would be tears of joy and pleasure."

Grandma and grandson, started off kissing and fondling each other. Agatha, kissed down his chest, pulled her grandson's boxers down before taking him into her mouth. After a few strokes, Darmon pushed gently on his grandma's head before putting her on her back on the bed. Agatha automatically, opened her legs wide for her grandson to do whatever he wanted with her. Darmon brought his grandma to 3 orgasms before Agatha pushed his head away and lifted him up so that her grandson lay between her legs.

Agatha reached down between their bodies, grabbed his cock and positioned it at the entrance to her womanhood, then whispered to her grandson, "I'm ready for you, my sweet child. Make me yours."

Darmon in a haze of lust, just drove his cock into his grandma hard and deep with a single stroke. Agatha screamed in pleasure, knowing they were now complete, "OH MY FUCKING GOD... YOU'RE STRETCHING ME TOO MUCH... EVEN YOUR GRANDDAD REST HIS SOUL WASN'T AS BIG... MY DARLING BABY... FUCK ME HARD... YOU'RE DEEPER IN ME THAN YOUR GRANDFATHER OR ANY TOYS I'VE USED."

What followed next, was Agatha was insatiable, she had multiple orgasms where she rode her grandson, in cowgirl and reverse cowgirl, then then doggy style, standing fuck with and with her leg wrapped around his hip. Agatha got her man to fuck her against the wall, spoon fucking and various other positions that Darmon didn't even know were possible. Let's say that neither of them got any sleep that night, in fact neither did any of the other women as all they heard were the grunts, pants and moans of the lovers having wanton sex. As dawn come, Agatha and Darmon fucked twice more in the shower.

What surprised everyone, including the maids, was when Darmon in boxers and Agatha naked walked into the dinning room. The women were stunned, that didn't even clap or cheer as they had been doing. Lynette this time noticed the cum leaking from her mother's pussy down the inside of her legs. She got up and went to her mother, scooped the cum on two fingers, put one in her mouth to suck of the combined juices and then stuck the other into her mother's open stunned mouth, before she stepped back clapping and cheering. This woke everyone else up and they also clapped and cheered.

Agatha blushing said, "My god, have I opened Pandora's Box?" This caused everyone to laugh, except Darmon who didn't understand the reference, and decided to remain silent.

"Grandma, so is it true?" Jade asked

"Is what true, sweetie?" Agatha wanted to confirm the context of the question.

"Is Darmon, longer and wider than grandpa?" Jade asked the question that was on everyone's mind.

"Oh, god, you all heard that?" Agatha asked shocked.

"Mom, I'm pretty sure the neighbors a mile away from us heard that," Lynette chuckled.

"Oh my god, I wasn't that loud was I? Since, I said no more secrets in this family. I will tell you now that my grandson is bigger than your grandfather, Jade. I mean a lot bigger and even bigger than any toy I might have used in the past," Agatha confessed.

"Well, if we are all revealing secrets then I can tell you, my nephew is also bigger than my husband was. Maybe by a few inches in length and about 2 inches in thickness," Lynette also revealed.

"Mom! TMI!" Both Amber and Jade said in sync, which brought around a new round of laughter.

Then all eyes turned to Evelyn, who got all shy and blushed, "Uhhh, Jacob is 5 inches hard and my son is more than that flaccid."

"Mom!" This time it was Elizabeth and Sara who loudly said this. Another round of laughter followed.

Breakfast was served with Agatha deciding to eat in the nude. Helen and Alice teased their mistress, "Mistress, is this the new dress code for breakfast now," asked Helen, which caused giggles from the other women. "Mistress, what about lunch and dinner? Are we now a naturist household?" Alice asked to continue the teasing. This also brought laughter from the women with a red faced Agatha unable to say anything.

Later that day, Lynette made some phone calls and arranged a PI to watch her brother.

To say that Elizabeth was scared and apprehensive would be an understatement. For the last five nights she had heard, her family being taken by her brother.

Some of the women, who weren't virgins screamed with passion and her cousin Amber screamed in pain. As for her sister, she heard the scream of pain and heavy sobbing. The only good thing that she took away from that was that both her cousin and sister were happy beyond belief and their screams of pain had soon turned to ones of passion.

Still the knowledge of knowing that her brother was going to impale her with was daunting. Elizabeth had questioned her mother, aunt, cousin and sister about what to expect. When they described his cock to her, it nearly made her sick. It was Elizabeth's mother that consoled her daughter and told her this had to happen for our family to heal. Evelyn told her daughter that Darmon will not knowingly hurt her and she didn't need to go through with this.

"You know Sara was the same way," Elizabeth's mother had stated. "In fact she thought your brother only just wanted to have sex with her and nothing beyond that."

Elizabeth just listened to her mother, Evelyn chuckled, "You know your brother even offered her a way out, even if he claims it wasn't. He told Sara that he didn't want to hurt her and she didn't need to go through with this. He told Sara that he hoped they could still continue doing the other things and could come back to this at a later date. Sara claimed it wasn't a test for her brother, but I feel that she is intelligent enough to do that. In the end it seems that your brother passed the test. Have you seen how happy Sara is now?"

"Yes, mom. I'm also a little jealous that my little sister lost her virginity before me, but that is just how our luck played out," Elizabeth said.

"If you don't feel you can do it then your brother will understand. Although, I can promise you one thing, if you do go ahead with it, the bond with your brother will be unbreakable, unless you truly screw up somehow, like sleeping with your dad," Evelyn chided her daughter.

Elizabeth winced at that statement, "Sorry, mom. I didn't want to, but thought that if I did it would help you and Darmon."

"No, honey. Doing that would have destroyed this family. All I will say is, when you see him later this evening talk to your brother, he will listen, trust me on this," Evelyn reassured her daughter as she lay a gentle hand over Elizabeth's.

Elizabeth did find the courage to go see her brother in his room that evening. Darmon was sat on the bed waiting as he did with this grandma. Elizabeth entered, stopped before the threshold and waited, fear was clearly etched on her face. Darmon couldn't be sure if it was due to what will happen tonight or fear that he will reject her. Instead Darmon smiled at his eldest sister to disarm her.

"Uhhh, brother, can I come in?" Elizabeth asked in almost a whisper but just loud enough for Darmon to hear the words.

"Of course, will you come sit beside me please, sis?" Darmon asked patting the bed besides him.

Elizabeth cautiously walked toward her brother and sat besides him. Elizabeth remained silent, contemplating what her brother will do.

"Sis, When Sara was in the exact same spot as you now, I told her the same as I will tell you. If you're not ready or are having second thoughts then we can leave this. I will never force or want to hurt you," Darmon reassured his sister.

"It's not that..." Elizabeth started before falling silent.

"Sara, while she may make out that it wasn't a test to see how committed I was, I believe subconsciously she was testing me. I can and will assure you that my intentions are genuine. Regardless of what happens this evening, this will not change how I feel, so if this is a test then know it isn't necessary."

"Trust me, brother, that isn't what's troubling me and I would never test your commitment. Truthfully, I'm scared of your size and length. I told the other that I don't have a hymen anymore because I broke that with a hairbrush handle by accident. I've heard you make love to our cousin and sister. While I know I will not bleed like they did, your size is still likely going to cause me some pain and discomfort," Elizabeth confessed.

Elizabeth chuckled, "You know we girls talk and they keep telling me that I shouldn't be scared. They tell me you're a good boyfriend that will take care of me. Heck, even mom encouraged me by saying our bond will grow stronger and be unbreakable afterwards."

"They're not wrong. I feel more attached to them and would protect them. That is not to say that having sex with them is a requirement for protection, no! It just makes our bonds stronger... It's hard to actually put into words and is more an emotional bond we share together," Darmon replied.

Elizabeth sighed, "Yeah, you make it sound romantic in a way."

"Isn't it?" Darmon said smiling at his sister and put his hand over hers.

Elizabeth just watched as her brother held her hand as she kept looking down at this, before quietly saying, "Darmon, I know you're probably angry or upset with me for suggesting I be the trap to lure dad into, you got to understand I suggested it for you and mom. I really didn't want to do it. I've hurt you and mom all these years. I thought this was something that I could do as some sort of way to pay for my previous actions."

"You know I would never want you to do that. I wouldn't say any of you belong to me as my property, but as your boyfriend and family, it hurts to see someone I care for would want to debase themselves for me. Before it even gets that far, come see me and we can find another way. That goes for each of those that have formed a bond with me."

"Oh, brother, I promise that if something is troubling me then I will come see you first before making any rash choices," Elizabeth confirmed.

"That is good to hear," Darmon responded.

Elizabeth was amazed as this was exactly what her mother had said, 'trust her brother.'

"Well as per grandma's request. I don't mind you cumming inside me. If you're okay with that, then I would take my chances. Accept that as some sort of penance for hurting you all these years," Elizabeth giggled.

"So, I take it I passed your test, and you want to make our bond stronger," Darmon said with humor in his voice.

"Oh silly, it wasn't a test and YES! I want us to make love," Elizabeth giggled like a schoolgirl and launched herself at her brother, pulling him down on the bed with her.

As with everyone so far, it always started with kissing. Darmon and Elizabeth kissed tenderly at first and as passions mounted moved to French kissing. Soon their clothes were removed and both panted naked in each other's arms. Darmon was rock hard, but he knew that even if his sister was soaking wet right now, he needed to loosen her up before he entered her. After breaking the French kiss, Darmon trailed kisses down his sister's body, teasing her nipples and navel on the way to her pussy.

Darmon brought his sister to two orgasms before he thought his sister was ready. Knowing that she didn't have a hymen, Darmon decided to make love to his sister in the missionary position. He took hold of his cock and put the tip against her opening then lent down to blow and whisper into his sister's ear, "Sis, this is your last chance to back down, if you tell me to stop I will, but once I'm inside then you are mine and I'm yours. I love you, big sis."

Elizabeth groaned and moaned and moved her hips to try and take her brother inside, this was all Darmon needed and pushed inside his sister in one smooth thrust.

"OH MY FUCKING GOD... YOU'RE IN ME, BROTHER... *MOAN* HOW THE FUCK DID THAT ALL *PANT* FIT IN MY BODY..." Elizabeth screamed. In her room, their mother smiled and knew this family was stronger for it and was glad that her daughter went through with it.

Since, Elizabeth didn't have a hymen and was less sore as a result of making love and then fucking, she had 5 more orgasms whilst having sex with her brother and Darmon came three times inside his sister, before Elizabeth called a timeout. "I'm sorry, brother. I can't take anymore from you this night. I promise you we can have sex in the morning and whenever you want going forward."

Darmon just smiled at his oldest sister and kissed her tenderly before Elizabeth cuddled up next to her brother, panting heavily, "I love you, little brother. I'm sorry for everything I've done to hurt you." Elizabeth then burst into tears and she cried against his shoulder. Darmon just cuddled his sister, kissing her forehead and

waiting for her to calm down. Once Elizabeth has stopped crying, Darmon answered his sisters confession, "I love you too, big sis."

They slept for a few hours before the bright morning light lit up Darmon's room. Not caring about the time, Elizabeth mounted her brother's morning wood and rode him until they both climaxed together, "YES YES FUCK ME BROTHER... MAKE YOUR BIG SISTER CUM... MAKE A BABY IN ME." That brought them both to orgasm. In the shower, brother and sister fucked again with Darmon behind his sister whilst she leaned against the tiled shower wall, there was a lot of grunting, panting, moans and the slap of flesh on flesh.

As was customary now, when Darmon and Elizabeth entered the dinning room for breakfast they were greetings with claps and cheers. Evelyn went up to her daughter and hugged her tightly, and whispered into her ears, "Welcome fully to your brother harem, honey." Elizabeth blushed.

As they ate breakfast, laughing and joking, it was Amber who voiced that only one remained, "So, my little sister is the final one. I hope you're ready to join us, sis."

Jade blushed, but feared her voice would break and chose to remain silent. It was Lynette, who with a smirk on her face said, "Maybe, not..." then chuckled at the puzzled looks on the younger women faces. The older women knew she was referring to the maids Helen and Alice, but chose not to reveal that.

All the women throughout the day were teasing Jade, especially the younger women group. Jade tried to brush off their teasing, but deep down she was unsettled. Jade was already ready to give up her virginity to her cousin and didn't want to be left behind, she reasoned that if her sister and cousins could take Darmon then there was no reason she shouldn't be able to. Still the thoughts were running wild in her head, 'Would it fit?' 'Could she handle the pain?' and other various thoughts.

It didn't help Jade much, that whenever the other women were near Darmon or looked at his bare chest and glance down to his trunks, their nipples were hard points from arousal. The feelings grew as she even witnessed their grandma making out with Darmon openly and no one even batted an eye or even showed any signs of

discomfort, at this. Jade was almost in a daze from arousal and her pussy was leaking for most of the day, she even contemplated going to her room to relax and masturbate to take the edge off, but decided against that as she felt her cousin should experience every sexual tension and moment, together.

That night, Darmon awaited his cousin Jade. Darmon's bedroom door opened and Jade stood routed to the spot, until Darmon got up from the bed and looked down for a split second before a body tackled him pushing them both back on his bed.

Jade kissed her cousin hard with a lot of lust and passion, this caught Darmon by surprise. He knew the others had been teasing Jade throughout the day, but never in a million years could have expected this from Jade, who from what he had learned over the weeks that he'd been courting everyone, that she had been reluctant in forming a relationship with him.

Jade didn't want to waste anytime and hooked her fingers into her cousin's boxers and pushed them down his legs then using her feet to ensure they were completely off. As Jade was French kissing her cousin, she also removed her own panties.

Jade's arousal was too large for any foreplay and moved her cousin onto his back and got on top of him. Jade reached down and grabbed her cousin's cock and pointed it up before moving the head of his cock at the entrance to her vagina. Jade felt she was wet enough and didn't hesitate before plunging her very tight vagina onto her cousin cock, breaking her hymen and taking him balls deep in a single thrust.

"OH MOTHERFUCKER..." Jade shouted before she burst into tears. Darmon panicked thinking that he had really hurt his cousin and embraced her in a tight grasp, "I'm sorry... I'm sorry!" Darmon tried to sooth her.

Instead of taking her time to adjust to her cousin's size, she pushed him back down on the bed, looked into his eyes with her own which shone with pride and love. Jade rode her cousin hard, which scared him as she just wanted to get fucked instead of enjoying making love their first time. Darmon looked down and saw the blood that had pooled at the base of his cock which made Jade look also.

Jade saw the blood knowing she was now her cousin's woman and this caused her to moan and pant hard. Jade rode her cousin even harder, smashing her pubic mound against her cousins. For a few minutes all that could be heard was the sounds of sex, the grunts, the moans, the pants and the heavy sound of slapping flesh. A few minutes later, Jade reached her limit and bucked and flailed around as her orgasm took control of her body, before she collapsed onto her cousin's chest.

Darmon let Jade relax and catch her breath. Darmon was happy that Jade at least had cum and hoped she got that out of her system, so that he can now make tender love to her. Darmon rolled Jade onto her back without leaving the tight confines of his cousin's vagina. Darmon leaned down kissing his cousins neck and giving her a hickey as she caught her breath, then whispered, "I love you."

Jade head moved to look into her cousin's face to see if there was any deception in his eyes, finding none, "I love you too, cousin," before they started to make out again.

Darmon took control of their loving making next, with slow steady thrusts, where his cock would bump up against her cervix, this made his cousin orgasm twice more.

On the second orgasm, Jade wrapped her legs around her cousin hips and held on for dear life, Darmon was about to climax himself and wanted to give Jade a chance to push him away, "Jade, babe... *PANT* I'm going to cum... *PANT*." Darmon didn't know if she heard him or not, but as well as her legs trapping him Jade dug her nails into his back. Darmon exploded into his cousins tight vagina and as Jade felt the blast of sperm hit the back walls of her vagina and against her cervix, she climaxed again, "OH YOU MOTHERFUCKER... *PANT* *MOAN* FILL ME WITH *PANT* YOUR BABY MAKERS."

Darmon, pulled out from his cousin tight vagina which tried hard to keep him with a vice like grip, his cum started to leak out of her vagina, Jade was very very sore. Darmon tried to caress his cousin's pussy and Jade winced, "I'm sorry, Darmon. My pussy is very sore and it hurts to even touch it. Please forgive me that I can't let you have me more."

Darmon just held her in his arms and kissed her tenderly, "There's no need to apologize. I know there will be more times after this, this is only the beginning. Although, there is one thing that puzzles me, 'motherfucker'?"

Jade genuinely laughed at her cousin asking this, "Sorry, if my language during sex was colorful, sometimes, some women express emotions using dirty language and the word 'motherfucker' is warranted, since you have made love to your mother, my mother and even our grandmother."

Darmon also laughed when hearing this and after catching his breath, said, 'I suppose I am a 'motherfucker' then. I know it's too late to ask but were you okay with me cumming inside you? I tried to warn you.'

"I heard you and wanted it, I wouldn't have let you otherwise," Jade said then remembered she had dug her nails into her cousin's back. Jade quickly moved which caused her to wince in pain as her pussy protested the sudden movement and pushed her cousin around to check his back, "I'm sorry, I dug and scratched your back with my nails."

Darmon heard concern in Jade's voice, which was mirrored in her face, before he moved back and looked deep into her eyes, "That was nothing compared to what I suffered at the hands of my father." This brought tears to Jade's eyes and caused Darmon to kiss her.

The cousins slept soundly that night and in the morning, Jade tried to have sex with her cousin again but her pussy was still very sore and they just got up had a shower before heading to the dinning room.

There was another round of clapping and cheers. It was Amber who asked, "Really sis, motherfucker?"

Jade blushed and then answered, "It's true isn't? Our cousin has fucked his mother, our mother and our grandmother. Besides, I said that in the heat of the moment." This caused the others to laugh, giggle and chuckle.

"Yes, When my grandson is making love to one of us mothers then that is true, I suppose," Agatha chuckled.

"Mom, now that my son has taken us all, do we keep the order the same?" Evelyn asked to make sure there wasn't going to be any sort of problem or favoritism involved.

"Yes, darling. For now I suppose that would be best, in time, it would be up to Darmon to decide who catches his fancy on the day. So Evelyn, you're up next," Agatha decided.

"Uhhh... Ohhh... Do you mind if I take a day of rest, grandma. I love sex with you all but do you mind if I take a day to recharge?" Darmon asked.

"Oh, god. Of course you can. I'm sorry that we didn't take you into account," Agatha worried that she had forgotten how the only man in her life would need time to relax and enjoy life without the constant pressure to service his harem.

Everyone looked sheepish and had only thought of their own needs and nodded to accept their man's wishes.

Later that day, as Darmon relaxed with all his harem who gave him room to recharge and unwind. Jade was concerned about her pussy being so sore, "Mom, can we go to my room. I think I might have damaged my pussy." Lynette was actually worried and both mother and daughter went to Lynette's room instead.

"Honey, take off your bikini bottoms and sit on the edge of the bed then open your legs so that I can examine you," Lynette ordered and Jade complied.

Lynette spent a while examining and prodding her daughter's pussy. "Honey, can you describe your first sexual intercourse action?"

Jade blushed before she responded, "Uhhh, mom. All the teasing everyone gave me that day had my arousal levels sky high. I didn't let Darmon get me ready and instead attacked him with passion and lust. I was already very wet and just took him into me in one thrust, breaking my hymen in the process. After that I went wild on him, until I climaxed. It was then that Darmon took control and made love to me."

Lynette just smiled, "There is no lasting damage that your body won't heal by itself. Your pussy is just sore at how you treated her. You know how big your cousin is, that is one tool that a female needs to take inside her slowly and carefully."

"So just need time to heal?" Jade asked to confirm that she would have to suffer for a few days.

"Yes, honey. Not trying to embarrass you but your pussy is still gaping a little. Try to avoid getting too excited over the next few days and especially, no masturbation or trying to get your cousin to fuck you again," Lynette ordered.

That night everyone was in their own beds. Darmon missed someone sleeping next to him, but welcomed a good nights rest.

The following night Darmon's mother, Evelyn, visited him. This wasn't just about teaching her son anymore, it was now an act of showing her son what he actually meant to her. Evelyn's screams of passion were heard by everyone. While the majority of her son's semen ended up flooding her womb, there was plenty inside her stomach also. Darmon also had his fill of his mother's sweet nectar.

Now, that everyone in the family had had their first time with Darmon, there was no need to keep quiet and Evelyn wanted to brag that her son was fucking her so well.

Once, they finished for the night, at least until the morning, it was Evelyn who spoke first, "Honey, I'm in love with you. I'm in love with my own son. I know I have to share you with your sisters and the rest of the family and that doesn't bother me anymore. I've seen how they feel about you."

"Mom, I love you also... I mean, I'm in love with your also, but I think, no I know, I'm love with everyone else also. Are you sure you want to have a child with me?" Darmon confessed and asked.

Evelyn put her hand against her son's cheek and moved his head to look at her, "Honey, look at me. This is something I really want. One day, your father will see how much you mean to me, especially, when I throw the pregnancy test in his face. My love is for you and our current family only."

Evelyn wanted her son to be the big spoon as he grabbed her breasts before both fell asleep. When the bright sun shone in the morning to wake them, mother and son fucked again in bed and again in the shower.

There was no longer any need for any fanfare since everyone had had the first times with Darmon. Now it was just smiles and knowing looks since they had already heard the cries of passion during the night and morning.

Breakfast was eaten in chuckles, giggles and laughing as someone said or did something funny. After breakfast as everyone else had gone to do their daily routine, Lynette stayed at the dinner table, watching the maids clean up. Once, they were nearly finished Lynette spoke, "Helen, Alice will you meet me after you're done clearing up?"

Both maids answered in sync, "Yes, madam."

It was about 10 minutes later that both Helen and Alice come to the dinner table, "Madam, how can we be of service," asked Alice.

"Please sit, I have a request to ask of you both," Lynette motioned for the maids to sit and when they sat facing Lynette they waited for the madam to speak.

"Before, I ask... You know what my nephew, the young master, is doing for this family, right?" Lynette asked.

Both maids blushed, "Yes, madam. He is making the mistress and her family happy and whole again," Helen responded.

"That he certainly is. I never thought I would be able to love or fall in love again, but Darmon proved me wrong. Even mother is besotted with him. As for the others, you're not blind to how they feel. Do you have any problem knowing my nephew is loving his flesh and blood family?" Lynette asked.

"No, madam. We are not blind to see the joy and laughter that has returned to these walls. As for what the mistress and her family do within this house is private for her and her family," Alice stated.

"That is good to know, so my question is 'Do you want to be a part of the young master's harem?'."

Both Helen and Alice looked at each other and a slight nod passed between them, it was Helen that answered the question, "Yes, we would both like to be a part of it, if the young master would have us that is."

"Good, Good. I have to confess I have an ulterior motive when I asked... I want to show and teach my nephew, how women can love each other. I will be present and will not be a part of it unless my nephew requests it. This would be a full on tutorial act of girl-on-girl sex. If Darmon then chooses to fuck either of you or both of you, then I hope you will allow it. I suspect that my nephew will have enough stamina for all of us."

"Madam, we're not deaf either and have heard the cries of lust and passion even in the servants house. Every night he is with someone, we have also been making love to each other. We know that if the young master accepts either of us or both of us, then our lesbian relationship will end, as per the request from Madam Evelyn. We accept this condition," Alice said.

"I know this might be hard for you as you've been together for a long time now. It's possible that my nephew would welcome his harem to be intimate with each other, although I suspect that would only be true, when he is present to enjoy also," Lynette sighed in response.

Lynette smiled, "Good, with that said. You know the young master doesn't use any form of birth control and neither do we, You also should know he like to cum inside his partners. Are you both on birth control?"

"Madam, we are live-in maids. Do you see any men that would require such methods of control? Why would we need birth control when I'm only with another woman," Helen answered.

"That's a fair point. So how do you feel about the young master cumming inside either of you? Just know that if you do become pregnant with his child then the child becomes part of the family and will get the love he or she deserves."

Both maids looked at each other again and another nod passed between them, "We serve the mistress and her family. If the young master desires us then we in turn desire the young master. It was not unheard of centuries ago that masters would impregnate their servants," Helen simply stated.

"My god, Helen, Alice. We're not in the dark ages anymore. If you don't want to get pregnant, then you can go on birth control. Mother will never force you to do something you're against," Lynette said with some edge in her voice.

"We meant no disrespect, madam. It was just a way to express that we don't want to be on birth control and are always available for the young master," Alice simply said to sooth Lynette.

"I'm sorry. It should also be noted that, should Darmon accept either of you or both, then you are to stay true to him alone. That means that your relationship with each other ends, at least behind his back. You will not take another man into you after the young master has taken you. It would mean that you belong to him, not as his property but as his companion, as a member of the harem. Can you accept that?"

Both maids answer in unison, "Yes!"

"Good, good! Be ready this evening outside the young master bedroom door. It will be my turn to visit him this evening and when I call you, come in naked and show him how women make love to each other. This will be the final time you would be

intimate with each other alone and only if the young master allows it when you both share his bed at night," Lynette ordered the maids.

The maids just nodded and Lynette couldn't read any emotions in their expressions, eyes or face to indicate if they weren't happy their relationship with each other was to end, if either one was selected to be added to the harem.

Darmon was expecting his aunt that night as per the schedule and wasn't disappointed when she did open his bedroom door. Lynette moved over to her nephew and kissed him lovingly. As they broke the kiss to catch their breaths, Lynette whispered to her man, "Honey, I have a surprise for you this evening. It's part of teaching you about sexuality."

Darmon was excited, as any new things his women wanted to try, was expanding his horizons and education, "Auntie, anything you want to teach me is already a surprise to me. What have you got in store for me today?"

Lynette in a loud voice, so the maids could hear beyond the door, "You can come in now."

The bedroom door opened again and in walked the maids, Helen and Alice, naked.

"Honey, you have learned to love us, who are all females within this family, and you've made us all very happy. Sexuality is vast and preferences change between partners, for example, the traditional couple would be a male and female combination, for some it could be lesbianism where both partners are women, that's one woman who loves another woman, If lesbianism exists then a male with a male partnership is called a gay relationship," Lynette explained.

"Honey, can I ask how you feel about being intimate with another male? Some like it as well as being with women, they would be called bisexual. In the case of the maids, Helen and Alice are bisexual, they are women who like each other and also like to be with a man. I have asked them to join us this evening, so they can demonstrate the act of lesbian sex and if you join them later, then their bisexual sex nature," Lynette continued the explanation.

Darmon felt sick in his stomach with the thought of having sex with another male, "Auntie, I'm not interested in any other males near me or my women. So, I can totally say, I am not bisexual since you already know I like women."

"That is good to know, I also don't find the image of a male on male sex exciting. So we can agree on that at least. Having said that, I don't mind watching girl-on-girl sex or even girl-girl-boy sex. I have to say that I did experiment when I was at collage with women and found the experience enlightening and nice, this stopped after I meet your uncle and married."

"Now, I am with you and you're my man now, and my sex life is fulfilling, but sometimes I do get the urge to be with another woman. I won't do this though, at least behind your back. If you were an active participant and you wanted me to be intimate with another woman as you made love to either of us or both of us, then I would welcome that into our relationship."

"Auntie, I might like that if I know both are with me, and will not leave me or do this behind my back. If you had to pick another woman to join in who would it be?" Darmon was clearly setting boundaries and really wanted to know who his aunt would pick to join in.

Lynette chuckled, "Your mother, my sister-in-law. Followed by my own mother, my daughter Amber, your sister Elizabeth, then Jade and Sara together. I have to also admit Helen and Alice, also intrigue me and I'm hoping that you take all three of us tonight."

Darmon also chuckled, "Wow, you really want to join me when I'm with another woman, and you'll really choose my mother first?"

"Yes, I would. I've always found her sexy and the screams of passion she shouts as you take her, just make me want to have you take us both at the same time. Anyway, that is something that we can discuss or put into action at a later date. Helen and Alice are to show you lesbian sex," Lynette said as she lead her nephew to the head of the bed, so their backs were against the headboard, while Helen and Alice moved to the foot and center of the bed.

Darmon watched as the maids, started of by embracing each other and gently pecking each other's lips. As they started to feel more aroused the maids pushed their breast together and started to French kiss. Darmon thought, this was nothing new and he would do the same with his partner also. Lynette was watching her nephew and saw that his cock was getting hard and put her hand over his bulge, which cause him to let out a quiet moan. Darmon darted his eyes quickly to his aunt and then down to her panties before he put his hand inside them to touch and play with his aunt's pussy.

Darmon's head snapped back as he heard the maids moaning and to his side his aunt also moaned.

Helen and Alice had broken the kiss and it was Helen who was kissing her way from Alice's neck to her breasts. Helen teased Alice's areola, by laying small kisses before taking her right nipple into her mouth and gently sucked. Darmon was rock hard now and his aunt pushed her nephews boxer's down to expose his cock. Lynette grabbed her nephew's cock and began to stroke him.

Darmon watched as Helen did the same to Alice's left breast before laying gentle kisses back towards Alice's mouth. Soon they were French kissing again and after the kiss broke it was Alice who did the same to Helen.

"Honey, I know this isn't any different to what you do to us with the exception that they can both do this to each other. A big difference would come later. Just enjoy the show for now," Lynette whispered into her nephew's ear as she blew into it. Darmon shivered with pleasure.

The maids moved to a sixty-nine position, with Alice's head and Helen ass pointed towards the madam and young master. Darmon and Lynette watched as Alice instead of going for Helen's pussy, kissed and licked Helen's asshole. Helen let out a whelp and moaned loudly. Darmon watched in surprise, and whispered, "Wow, that is new. I didn't know that was an option."

"Oh honey, there is so much that you have to learn, the others and I will only be too glad to teach you. Some women find pleasure in anal stimulation and even allowing their man to fuck them there, it is commonly know as anal sex."

"Is that something you would like, auntie?" Darmon asked.

"Maybe, never tried it. Your uncle wasn't brave enough to try it with me, and truthfully, I'm not a hundred percent sure it is something I would like, but I won't know that unless I try, right?" Lynette chuckled.

"I can't see what Helen is doing to Alice, is she also doing the same as Alice?" Darmon inquired.

"I doubt it, honey. Alice's asshole is likely too far down for Helen to kiss or lick, I suspect that Helen is eating Alice's pussy."

Alice after licking and eating Helen's ass for awhile, moved over to Helen's pussy. So both women were moaning and panting to an orgasm, but they didn't stop and continued to eat each other and added fingers to each other's pussies.

Darmon watched as Alice used her wet finger from fingering Helen to put it at the entrance to Helen's asshole and pushed it inside. Both aunt and nephew let out loud moans as they witnessed this. After the third orgasm for each of the maids, they separated and moved to face each other. The maids kissed and licked their own pussy juices from the other's face.

"Is it over?" Darmon asked

Lynette laughed, "I doubt that, my horny nephew."

The maids caught their breath and then moved so that they locked their legs together in a way that both of their pussies were touching and proceeded to grind against each other. Darmon watched shocked and Lynette just giggled.

"Honey, as you can see neither of the women has a penis to enter the other, and for women doing what they are doing now means their clitoris' would rub and bump against each other. This in turn would bring them great pleasure and orgasms," Lynette said whilst watching the maids scissor each other.

10 minutes later, both Helen and Alice had two more orgasms each, before they moved apart and lay side by side, catching their breath.

"Honey, so that is how a girl who love other girl would have sex with each other. What do you think, sexy, right?" Lynette asked, she was horny watching the maids fuck.

"Wow, never knew this was a thing and you're right it's sexy, but not sure if that is because both Helen and Alice are pretty," Darmon replied.

At hearing the young master calling them pretty, both maids blushed.

"Honey, you're probably really horny now and it's something I will take care off right now. I'm going to suck your cock until you explode into my mouth. Can I get your permission to kiss both Helen and Alice afterwards?" Lynette asked, hoping that her nephew would give permission as she really wanted to make out with the maids.

Darmon just nodded, not understanding or knowing where this was going. Lynette didn't waste anymore time and got both herself and her nephew naked, before she got between his legs and gave him one of the best blowjobs he ever had. Darmon was watching the maids as they played with themselves and licking their lips as the madam took the young master deep into her mouth. The excitement of watching the maids had Darmon already on edge and it didn't take long before he unloaded into his aunt's mouth.

Once, Lynette's mouth was full of her nephew's cum, she moved with her mouth closed to Alice first and kissed her pushing her tongue into the maid's mouth, pushing some of her nephew's cum into Alice's mouth. Alice looked surprised and then moaned at the kiss and receiving the young master's essence. Lynette then moved over to Helen and did the same thing. All three opened their mouths to show Darmon the cum inside their mouths before closing their mouths and swallowed.

Lynette and the maids giggled when they saw the stunned expression of Darmon's face and then moaned when they saw he was rock hard again.

"Honey, you have three very horny women who need you to fuck them. After you've fucked us all then we will talk. Do you think you can handle all of us tonight?" Lynette already knew her nephew was horny enough and had built up stamina during all the family bonding they had been doing. Taking on three horny females shouldn't pose a problem for her nephew.

"I think I can auntie, When I make love to my mom or grandma, you know I'm usually cumming at least 7 times. Heck, I don't know why you're doubting me, auntie, I've cum plenty of times with you alone," Darmon chuckled.

Lynette and the maids giggled with glee. What followed next was Darmon putting into action everything he had learned to date and managed to make each of them cum 4 times each and with him depositing his cum inside each of them twice.

Darmon lay exhausted on his back panting heavily with the women around him also panting heavily, everyone was try to get their breath back. Soon, it was Helen who moved to the young master's right side, Alice to his left and Lynette moved to lay on top of her nephew, kissing his chest, shoulder and then French kissing her nephew. "I'm so in love with you, honey," Lynette whispered.

Lynette then got up whilst she straddled her nephew and rested her tired pussy over his flaccid cock, "Honey, I said after everything we had to talk. Are you ready for this?"

Darmon held his aunt's cheek in his hand and looked up at her with love, "Of course, and I'm in love with you also, auntie."

Lynette swooned at hearing this before quickly recovering, "You've now seen how women could have sex with each other. I could see you enjoyed that and enjoyed the maids. Both Helen and Alice have expressed their desire to join us as your women and be a part of your harem. Do you accept them?"

"Why wouldn't I allow them to join, they are both sexy," Darmon replied as he looked from Helen to Alice and gently kissing each of the lips.

"Good, good, do you hear that Helen, Alice. The young master accepts you as his. As per what we discussed the relationship you both have with each other ends here, unless the young master wants to enjoy you both together and allows you to be intimate with each other, then and only then. This is not up for debate. If we find out that you have gone against this then you would be asked to leave the harem and employment with this household. Do you understand?"

Helen and Alice, both answer simultaneously, "Yes, we understand, madam."

"I know this may seem harsh to you both, as before you had no one else to take care of your sexual needs. Now you have the young master, who will take care of that for

you. If you do crave some time with another woman then ask him to have a threesome and get his permission to be intimate with the other woman," Lynette stated.

The maids looked at each other and a small nod passed between them, "We understand, madam."

"Good, I'm tired and I think we can all do with some sleep," Lynette said yawning.

Soon, everyone was asleep in bliss. When Darmon opened his eyes in the morning, he noted that the maids had already gone and his aunt was just about to impale herself on your morning wood. Darmon was a little disappointed that he couldn't get the fuck the maid in the morning or even share a shower with them, but understood they had responsibilities. "Good morning, auntie. Helen and Alice had to leave? Pity, I was hoping to fuck all three of you this morning before breakfast."

Lynette laughed, "You horny goat, I'm not enough for you anymore? Besides, they had to get up to serve the household."

"Of course, you are, auntie. Just that three is better than one, right?"

To prove her nephew wrong, Lynette rode him hard and fast ensuring he came inside her again that morning. They showered together but decided to not fool around too much.

When they entered the dinning room, Helen and Alice were off to one side. As Darmon and Lynette sat down to eat, Lynette announced, "Helen and Alice, have joined in my nephew's harem."

Everyone looked up and towards the maids, clapped and cheered. Both Helen and Alice blushed a deep red.

"Their order in the scheme of things is after Jade, and will be up to them to decide on who goes first or both together," Lynette pressed on. Darmon for the first time ever had a smug look on his face.

Darmon knew that if things progressed as expected then it was Amber's turn tonight and he was looking forward to it.

The women as they were prone to do chatted via phone and talks between them. It was revealed how Helen and Alice joined and was due to another lesson taught by Lynette. Sara especially, noted that her brother from what was said enjoyed the lesbian show.

Sometime, during the day there was a knock at the front door. Evelyn, Elizabeth, Sara and Darmon went into hiding, just in-case it was Jacob coming to check this location. It turns out there was a policeman who came to return a briefcase.

It was Alice, who answered the door to be greeted by a policeman, "Good morning, ma'am. Is there a Mrs. Masters present?"

"Yes, officer, if you would like to enter and wait in the foyer then I will go get the madam," Alice invited the policeman in.

"Thank you, ma'am," the policeman answered as he took off his hat and entered into the foyer.

Alice left and returned a few minutes with Lynette. Lynette looked at the officer and asked with puzzlement, "Officer, what can I do for you?"

"Are you one, Mrs. Lynette Masters, ma'am?" the policeman inquired.

"Yes, although after my husband's death I don't go by that name anymore, but I was. Anyway, my question still stands officer, what can I do for you?" Fear gripped Lynette's heart, in-case her brother had called the police in finding his wife, daughters and son.

"I'm sorry to inform you, ma'am, due to a cleric error after the investigation into Mr. Masters death, a briefcase that was found near the location of the accident, had been misfiled and it has only come to light that it belonged to Mr. Masters. I've come here today to return the property," the officer said in apology.

"This belonged to my husband and you're sure of this?" Lynette asked in disbelief.

"Yes, ma'am. The documents inside confirm this to be the case," the policeman confirmed.

"Thank you officer. Do I need to sign for receipt?" Lynette said with shaky hands.

"Yes, ma'am."

The officer left after handing the briefcase over and getting the signed receipt.

"Alice, can you gather my mother and Evelyn to the dinning room, please?" Lynette said in a quiet voice.

"Yes, madam," Alice said and went to follow the madam's request.

5 minutes later, Lynette was seated at the table as Agatha arrived with Evelyn.

"What is it, darling?" Agatha asked concerned.

"Mom, the police just returned Martin's briefcase. I'm too scared to open it and open wounds that I thought closed," Lynette said brokenly.

Agatha sat to her daughter's right and Evelyn sat to Lynette's left. Agatha took the briefcase from her daughter, opened it and started to look through the documents.

"THAT SON OF A BITCH!" Agatha screamed. Both Lynette and Evelyn weren't sure if she was referring towards Martin or someone else.

"Who are you talking about, mom?" Evelyn asked.

"JACOB!" Agatha shouted.

Lynette chuckled, "Mom, do you realize you're insulting yourself..."

"I'm sorry, darling. Here look at this?" Agatha handed over the document she had just read to her daughter.

Lynette read the document and scream, "I'M GOING FUCKING TO KILL HIM. I'M GOING TO RUIN HIS FUCKING LIFE!"

Evelyn snatched the document from Lynette's hand and started to read it then she just burst into tears. Evelyn and the other's had just read the signed contract, that

confirmed the shares to be given in exchange for Darmon to be adopted by Martin and Lynette.

The floodgates opened for Lynette also, "Mom... *SOB* Darmon *SOB* *SOB*..." Lynette couldn't go on. Evelyn was crying also, thinking how her son could have been happy without a father that tortured him day and night. Evelyn made a vow that she will see Jacob lose everything.

Agatha remained silent and motioned for Alice, "Alice, can you make all of us some strong drinks, dear?" Alice just nodded and prepared 3 strong drinks and set them down before her mistress and madams.

After Lynette has calmed down, "Mom, do we tell him?"

"Who!? Darling," Agatha responded, hoping she didn't mean her son, Jacob.

"Darmon, mom. Do we tell him? He could have been my son, instead of my man. Do we risk this with Darmon?" Lynette said in almost a whisper.

Evelyn wanted to say, 'Yes,' but decided to see how her mother-in-law would respond. Agatha with a deep sigh said, "Yes, eventually. I promised him no secrets."

Agatha paused and looked towards both of her daughters. Yes, she considered Evelyn her daughter over any attachment she had for her son. Agatha in a commanding voice asked, "Evelyn, darling and you also Lynette, darling. I need to ask are you a hundred percent committed to ruining Jacob's life? I have the start of a plan that will achieve this. Just note that if you have any attachment to Jacob at all, then I will not involve you in this. I lost my son, 13 years ago, he is just a man that has hurt my family and I will see him rot."

Both Lynette and Evelyn were shocked at Agatha's conviction.

"Mom, my only attachment is that he is the father of my children, and a piece of paper that binds us," Evelyn said.

"I doubt the girls see him as a father or someone that means something to them and as for my son..." Evelyn trailed off without finishing the sentence, but both Agatha and Lynette understood what she meant without needing to voice it. Evelyn continued, "Anyway, count me in."

"Mom, if he is no longer your son then I don't have a brother anymore. While we can't prove he had an hand in Martin's death, I suspect, he did. That man took my husband and Darmon away from me, at least at the time. Count me in on whatever plan you make."

That night Amber visited Darmon's room. Amber had healed over the past week and was ready to fully enjoy sex with her cousin. Cries of passion were heard throughout the house that night. Amber was sure after this bout of love making, and straight up sex, she could fully enjoy being with her cousin.

The next day, Sara knew it was her time and had meetings, talks and giggles with Jade. All of the women, were just glad they were bonding, probably talking about what they would get up to with Darmon. Never in a million years did they expect things to go as they did.

Sara decided to go to her brother's room early and had invited Jade also. Sara had heard the tale of how turned on her brother had been on the night Helen and Alice has joined the harem.

Sara and Jade were both naked in bed, and had been kissing each other to get further aroused, both girls were young and wanted to experience what it felt like to be with another woman. From kissing they moved to a sixty-nine position and were ready to start licking each other, when the door opened. Darmon saw Sara and Jade performing a sex act, he was shocked and stunned. The girls heard him, thinking he would come join them and giggled.

The door slammed shut and when they looked over at the door, Darmon wasn't there. Sara and Jade panicked. Both got up, naked and opened the door to find the hallway empty. 'What the fuck was going on,' they silently asked themselves. Panic set in stronger and they ran towards Sara's mother's room.

Sara in a panic shouted, "Mom, Mom!"

Evelyn could see hear the fear in her daughter's voice, "Honey?"

"Mom, Darmon ran away from his room. I was there with Jade to surprise him." Jade remained silent and feared that somehow they truly fucked up.

"What, where is he now?" Evelyn asked with some mounting dread.

"Don't know, he wasn't in the hallway when we opened the door," Jade answered.

"Okay, let me go find him. You both wait here," Evelyn told the girls.

Evelyn eventually found her son, in a dark corner of one of the bathrooms, he was rocking and mumbling, "I thought they loved me... Wasn't I enough for them... Why? Why?"

When Evelyn held her son in her arms he asked, "Why? Why? I thought they loved me? Don't they love me anymore?"

Evelyn didn't know who he was speaking about, but feared that Sara and Jade had a part in this, "Who are you talking about, honey?"

Darmon didn't respond, but continued to mumble, "I thought they loved me... Wasn't I enough for them... Why? Why?"

Evelyn got up and typed an urgent message into the women's group chat, "EVERYONE, MEETING IN POOL HOUSE NOW!"

Everyone bar, Sara and Jade had already arrived in the pool house. The maids had been added to the group chat and were also present.

"Helen, would you be a dear and collect, Sara and Jade and then come back here. They are in my bedroom," Evelyn asked. Helen nodded and went to gather the girls.

Agatha starting to ask, but was stopped with a raised hand by Evelyn as she said, "Please mom, let's wait for the girls."

There was complete silence for several minutes until Sara and Jade arrived with Helen. Evelyn asked the girls to sit.

"Would you please explain to me why my son is sitting in a dark bathroom, mumbling 'I thought they loved me and asking why'?" Evelyn asked with a calm voice that had a sharp edge.

Agatha and everyone knew this was something serious.

Sara and Jade, just looked at each other confused. Evelyn's voice took on a more commanding tone, "Well?"

Sara clearly frightened, answered, "I heard that Darmon enjoyed his time with Helen and Alice."

"So Sara asked me if I wanted to surprise Darmon," Jade continued.

"We both wanted to see what it felt like being with another woman," Sara continued.

"So we made out with each other on his bed and was in a sixty-nine position, when Darmon walked in," Jade related the next part of the story.

"I thought that seeing two of women loving each other would turn him on and we could have a threesome," Sara concluded.

"But Darmon left the room slamming his door," Jade added.

There was a pause to see if there was more of this story to tell. Evelyn exploded, "DO YOU FUCKING UNDERSTAND WHAT THE FUCK YOU BOTH JUST DID?"

Both Sara and Jade, burst into tears, clearing not understanding it.

Lynette saw Evelyn ready to let loose again, put her hand on her arm, "Yes, Darmon enjoyed his time with Helen and Alice. The thing is, that was part of teaching him. Darmon was an active participant in that encounter from the start. Do you understand?"

When Sara and Jade still crying looked blankly at Lynette. Lynette sighed, "Darmon knew they were going to perform a lesbian act. What you just did was not include him in that decision. In effect, you both just went behind his back. If you both were naked and waiting for him in bed, he would have jumped at the chance for a threesome. The fact that he caught you both about to or licking each other pussies is what set this all off. Now do you understand?"

Sara and Jade were suddenly starting to understand how bad they fucked up.

Agatha added, "Sweeties, he feels that he wasn't or isn't enough for you, and that you needed more from someone else. If you could do it with another woman, then who next, another man? You've made him question if he's man enough for you both or even any of us now."

Evelyn was fuming, but remained silent. Lynette continued, "For a normal man, I would say that this would be a blow to his male ego. For Darmon, it's different. He is surrounded by women he loves and gets love back in return. Darmon fears that each of us will leave him since he cannot satisfy us. This could have been avoided if you told him your plans, and if you wanted to know what it felt to be with another woman then ask him if he would like to see you with the other women."

Agatha continued, "Do you now see the mess you've caused. All Darmon has ever wanted from us is love. We gave him that, in addition to the love a woman can bestow on the man she loves. Now he thinks your love may have been false. When Helen and Alice joined the harem, it was with the condition that their current relationship with each other end. If they wanted to experience that form of love again then they ask and include him in the act."

"Darmon, doesn't know or understand the word 'cucked,' but he certainly felt it when you did this behind his back," Lynette added then sighed.

Sara and Jade now fully understand what they did, cried even more.

What followed was a discussion on how to fix this mess with no clear or easy solution. In the end Evelyn asked, "Mom, you will find Darmon in the 2nd bathroom, lower floor. Can you please take him to his room and sleep with him to comfort him. I doubt he will accept anyone else right now. It goes without saying no sex, unless he initiates it."

"I'm not stupid, darling. I will take care of my grandson until he gets over this or we find a solution to this mess," Agatha confirmed.

For the next few days, Darmon would avoid Sara and Jade and only accepted his grandmother at night until he kicked her out also and wanted to be alone. Darmon turned down all attempts at nightly visits from the others.

It got to the point that Amber who really loved her cousin starting to blame her cousin and sister for destroying what they had built. Many arguments ensued, never to blows but close on some occasions.

Many nights, the women would huddle together and weep. It got to the point that Darmon would take off in the morning and stay away until it was close to bedtime. On one of these occasions he saw everyone in the living room, crying. Darmon looked at them and ignored them before going to his room. This in turn caused them all to openly cry more.

This went on for a week and was getting to the point when Darmon actually thought it best if he left. It was from a source that he never expected that shone a ray of light into an otherwise dark room.

Elizabeth went to see her brother in his room. She didn't knock but just entered, Darmon was about to turn her away before Elizabeth asked, "Darmon, little brother. I just want to talk, please don't turn me away."

When Darmon didn't kick her out immediately, Elizabeth moved to sit on the bed, but kept enough distance between them, "Thank you, brother."

Elizabeth sighed, "What Sara and Jade did was stupid and they realize this now. They did it because they thought you would like it, on account of what happened with Helen and Alice. They admitted that they were curious about what it would be like to be with another woman and honestly believed that you would get horny and join them both. Mom has been fuming and all but stopped talking to Sara and Jade. Amber, truly love you as do I, has been fighting with Sara and Jade. Grandma, doesn't know how to fix this and has withdrawn. Aunt Lynette blames herself for not educating the girls enough, she had only been focusing on your education."

"As for me, Oh gods, I know I've fucked up plenty in the past. Did you know everyone is hurting from this mess? You included. The family is tearing itself apart with everyone crying themselves to sleep. The fun and laughter in this household has died. Little brother, this past week and a bit, you've ignored us and any of our attempt to show how we truly feel. How is this any different to when we were forced to ignore you due to dad?"

That last statement kicked Darmon in his gut and he winced at the accusation.

"Sara and Jade are young and maybe being in this relationship with you was too soon for them, and feel that they might be losing out on something. I cannot say one way or another on that, but what I do know is both Sara and Jade love you and want to be with you, and I mean with you 'only.' I can guarantee something like this will never happen again, all of your women know this now. Won't you forgive them like you did me?"

"Gods, I've missed being with you, in your arms, and us showing the love we have for each other. Mom, is a wreck and would burn the world down for you, just to make you happy again," Elizabeth chuckled. "Let's not even think about how Amber is taking this," Elizabeth continued chuckling even more.

"The point is that everyone does loves you. I love you! Gods, I never thought I would find true love and boy did I fall when I found it in my little brother. I know it may take time for you and them, to build that trust again. Just remember, we had trust issues ourselves. One small step at a time, little brother."

Elizabeth got up from the bed to leave but found the courage to ask, "Would you hold me before I leave, after that I will give you time to think things through?"

Darmon got up, move around the bed and opened his arms. Elizabeth jumped into his embrace and burst into tears. Darmon felt a pang in his chest and a tug to sooth his sister. Darmon stroked his sister's hair to calm her down, then kissed her on the forehead. "Thank you, Darmon. This means the world to me," Elizabeth moved back out of his embrace, wiped her tears with her hands, then suddenly gave her brother a quick peck on the lips, before running away from the room giggling in glee.

Darmon that night had much soul searching to do.

Darmon, the next day, had made a decision. He waited for a time when he could get his mom alone. As they passed in the hallway, Evelyn had her head down. Darmon grabbed her by the waist and pinned her against the wall. Evelyn was scared that her son had flipped and turned into his father. Darmon lifted her face up and kissed his mother hard. Evelyn's knees buckled and what she saw in her son's eyes wasn't a man possessed on extracting revenge or punishing her, but of one where he missed their close relationship. Evelyn moaned and slid to the floor as her son chuckling darted away.

Next Darmon did the same thing with his grandmother, his aunt and his eldest cousin, Amber. Darmon left each of them breathless. For now he avoided Elizabeth, Sara and Jade.

That night, as the women were getting into the habit of doing, they all meet in the living room to cry at the punishment that was forced upon them. Elizabeth, Sara and Jade notice that the older women group and Amber were all quiet and not showing signs of openly crying this night. Maybe, they have now accepted their lot in life and decided to move on and if that was the case then this family is over, they feared. Sara and Jade's stomach dropped thinking this was it, their actions had destroyed their family.

Darmon crept into the living room, Elizabeth, Sara and Jade had their backs to him. Evelyn, Agatha, Lynette and Amber watched Darmon creep in with a slight smirks teasing the edges of their mouths. Darmon saw that both Sara and Jade were sitting close together. Darmon moved up behind them and draped an arm around them both. Sara and Jade, jumped and were scared at this sudden action. When Sara and Jade saw who it was, they turned into his embrace and burst into tears. Elizabeth just smiled and watched.

After Sara and Jade calmed down, they started to apologize and tell him then would never do something like that again and they loved him. The others that Darmon had already kissed that day, laughed with joy. All was forgiven, but a hard lesson had been learned, a mistake that none of them would ever make again.

Darmon eventually turn towards his oldest sister, Elizabeth, "Sis, you opened my eyes last night and got me thinking. Your accusation was what got to me the most, I would be no better than dad," Darmon took his sister into his arms and kissed her tenderly then asked, "Would you share my bed tonight?"

Elizabeth didn't need to be asked twice and almost shouted "Yes," but in the end it came out all shy and quiet. Amber was jealous and Darmon saw this, so moved over to his cousin, taking her into his arms kissed her tenderly also, "Amber, someone told me that you truly love someone? Who? Do I know him or her? No judgment here as long as you're happy that is."

Amber playfully smacked her boyfriend on the arm, "Why, you getting jealous of the person I love, babe?"

Darmon chuckled and jokingly said, "Maybe. How about I steal you away from them and lock you in the room with me tonight?"

Both Amber and Elizabeth, looked at each other and were shocked, "Wait you mean both Amber and I, together," asked Elizabeth.

Darmon just nodded and smiled at them. With Darmon deciding this, it effectively meant the schedule was abandoned. The women silently agreed to let Darmon manage his time with each of them and prayed he didn't show favoritism.

Darmon was naked in his bedroom waiting for his cousin and sister to arrive. Amber and Elizabeth entered together, a little cautiously as they didn't know what to expect this evening. When they saw Darmon naked, Amber closed the door behind her then both women stripped naked themselves.

Darmon sat on his bed and motioned for his cousin and sister to come sit besides him.

"Well, not going to lie this is a little awkward," Amber said looking at both of her cousins.

Darmon, turned towards Amber and kissed her then moved to his sister and kissed her also. Darmon broke the kiss he had with both of them and then gently pushed their heads together. Amber and Elizabeth looked at Darmon in confusion and thought this was a test of some sort. It was Elizabeth who voiced their concerns, "Brother, are you sure? We don't want to do anything that could hurt you."

Darmon smiling just nodded, "Yes, I am sure."

The kiss between Amber and Elizabeth was awkward at best, and while nice both girls had some fear in their hearts. The kiss lasted less than 20 seconds before both girls pulled back watching Darmon for any signs of disapproval. All they saw was Darmon smiling at them with love.

"Good, now before we get started. I need to get some things off my chest," Darmon stated. "For starters, I don't mind my women wanting to be intimate with each other. What I will not tolerate is when they do this behind my back. I don't want my women to do that with the exclusion of me. As a compromise, I can and will tolerate my women showing affections for each other, that would be limited to kissing only. Do you understand?"

Both Amber and Elizabeth just nodded.

"Good, something else - sometimes, I might want to make love to you individually even if I am with multiple women at the same time. All I ask is that you seek my approval if you want to be intimate with each other, in most cases I would allow it. If I find out any of you, regardless of who, breaks this rule, then I will leave this house for good. This is not a threat to keep you all in line, but how strongly I feel about this," Darmon continued.

"From what my sister has told me, some of the women, might want to experiment and I would be a fool to always deny them that. I will not want any of you to take another into their arms that isn't already one of us. AND I certainly will not tolerate any of my girls, being flirty or wanting to get with another man. Do you understand? You're both mine and I will not let you go."

Amber and Elizabeth, had tears in the eyes at the mention that both were his and his alone, "Yes, of course we understand, babe," Amber said for both her and Elizabeth with total conviction.

"Wow, thank goodness for that. That's a weight off my chest. Now, you have my approval if you both want to try women sex as I make love to you both," Darmon concluded as he pushed his sister onto her back and made out with her. Amber in the meantime, was watching and playing with herself. 5 minutes later, Darmon left a panting Elizabeth and moved over to Amber and made out with her also. It was Elizabeth's turn to play with herself.

Leaving a panting Amber to catch her breath, Darmon started kissing his sisters neck, upper chest, areola's and nipples tenderly. Then trailing wet kisses down his sister's taut stomach, playing with her navel by pushing the tip of his tongue inside. Elizabeth had been moaning nonstop. Darmon used the techniques taught him by his aunt to raise his sister's sexual tension before he settled to eating out his sister.

Elizabeth's loud moans were muffled and when Darmon looked up he saw his cousin French kissing his sister and playing with her cousin's nipples, this caused him to moan in excitement. With the combined attack from her brother and cousin, quickly pushed Elizabeth over the edge. Elizabeth's butt lifted off the bed and her body shook as the orgasm ripped through her. Elizabeth fell back onto the bed 2 minutes later, after having one of the most powerful orgasms in her life.

Darmon left his moaning and panting sister to recover, before he start doing the same with Amber. After Elizabeth has recovered, she in turn French kissed her cousin and played with her nipples. It didn't take Amber long either to cum hard.

Darmon was seriously hard and needed to make love or fuck them. Elizabeth had recovered enough, so Darmon went over to her and mounted her in the missionary position. He held his cock as he feed it into his sister. Elizabeth wail of pleasure was loud and Amber was sure that everyone would have heard that. Not wanting to be left out and now having had permission from her lover, no her husband, as she decided her cousin was to her. Amber moved to straddle her cousin's head. Darmon seeing what was about to happen, moved his knees up and lifted himself up whilst continuing to plow into his sister.

Elizabeth saw something descending towards her face and looked up to see a pussy glistening wetly. Elizabeth was initially shocked and thought this might be going to far and what would her brother think. Elizabeth consider kissing and light fondling would be okay to keep her brother excited, but was this too far?

Elizabeth didn't have much time to contemplate or even object before Amber planted her pussy over her cousin mouth. Elizabeth tentatively brought her tongue out to lick her cousin's pussy and with Amber's body obscuring her view of her brother, she wasn't sure how her brother was reacting to this. Amber's moan told Elizabeth that she must be doing something right. As her brother fucked her and she ate her cousin out, Elizabeth was in bliss. Soon Elizabeth heard loud kissing and that could only mean that Amber was French kissing her brother.

Amber exploded first and Elizabeth quickly followed as her face with covered in pussy juice. Darmon seeing his girls have strong orgasms reached the point of no return and thrust his cock deep into his sister's tight cunt and let out jet after jet of his potent sperm to coat her cervix. Darmon hadn't had sex in just over a week and was backed up plenty and this time it was him that wailed out a scream of pleasure.

Amber got up off her cousin's face and watch her husband's face twist into what looked like pain, but the moaning told her it was anything but that. Darmon slowly removed his wet cock from his sister's tight vagina with a pop. Darmon's cum started to pool and dribble out of his sister's pussy. Amber, didn't want to let any of his seed go to waste, she gently pushed Darmon out of the way before putting her head between her cousin's legs to lick and eat her husband's cum from his sister's leaking pussy.

Elizabeth screamed in pleasure, grabbed her cousin's head and pulled it harder into her wet cum leaking snatch. Darmon was half-hard and after witnessing his cousin go down on his sister had him rock hard again. Darmon saw his cousin's up turned ass and decided that he had to have some of that. Darmon grabbed Amber by the waist, lined his cock with her pussy and slammed inside her hard. Amber screamed, "FUCK YES... POUND MY PUSSY *MOAN* AS I EAT *MOAN* YOUR CUM FROM *MOAN* YOUR SISTER."

That scream of pleasure was certainly heard by everyone and got them all very horny. They all had fingers inside their pussies as Darmon fucked Amber and Elizabeth.

The excitement of their new bond got the best of them and each started to orgasm, almost at the same time. Amber was the first to explode, followed by Darmon as he pushed deep into Amber and flooded her pussy with his life giving seed. When Darmon pulled out of Amber, Elizabeth quickly scooted down to lay on her back under Amber's leaking pussy as her brother's cum leaked into her open mouth. Darmon moved to Amber's head and offered her his cum soaked cock which she gratefully accepted.

When Amber had cleaned up her husbands cock, she moved her head back to Elizabeth's pussy and ate her out until Elizabeth also climaxed. After Elizabeth recovered a few seconds later and when no more cum leaked and dropped into Elizabeth's open mouth or face, she grabbed Amber by the hips and pulled her down to her mouth and sucked any of her brother's cum she could find.

Darmon, Amber and Elizabeth were too tired to have another orgasm. Darmon fell onto his back on his bed and the girls quickly moved to either side of him.

When their panting and breathing was under control, it was Amber who broke the silence needing to get clarity on what happened this evening, "Wow, that was amazing. Babe, are you okay with what your sister and I did? I've never considered wanting to be with another woman before and I have to say the experience was fun and that's only because you were with us. I promise you that I will never do anything like that outside of having you participate. I mean, I belong to you and not to anyone else in our group. I'm so very much in love with you, babe."

Elizabeth was happy, "Fuck me, brother. Amber said it all nicely. Truthfully, I've always wanted to eat mom's and our sister's pussies, but it's not a subject you can easily bring up, right? At least before all this happened. I mean, can you image me going to mom and telling her, 'Mom, I love you and want to eat your pussy'?" Elizabeth chuckled. "Before, you get your knickers in a twist that not going to happen, at least not directly. If you want it then it's something that I wouldn't say no to, of course with you present and fucking us both."

Darmon chuckled, "Really, sis. Fuck you? Haven't you had enough for now?"

"What! No fucking way, I cannot and will not ever get enough of you, brother," Elizabeth said mockingly.

Darmon cuddled with his cousin and sister, "I love you both so very much. Please don't ever hurt me, I don't think I could survive if you or anyone that I love did."

Amber and Elizabeth felt his heart felt plea and promised themselves they would rather die then do that. Both Amber and Elizabeth, moved up and kissed Darmon on opposite cheeks. Sleep soon claimed them in its gentle embrace.

In the morning, Darmon fucked each of the them again to 2 orgasms each and deposited a load into each of their pussies. In the shower, after confirming it was okay, Amber and Elizabeth French kissed and fingered each other pussies until they came again.

When they entered the dinning room it was with a difference, not because, he now had both girls clinging to each arm giggling, it was the fact they were all naked. Darmon had decided that for easier access he wanted his women to were less clothes or in this case nothing at all.

"Fuck me", Lynette choked.

Darmon laughed and said, "Maybe later, auntie."

"So, can I assume this tantrum you had over the last week has now ended, honey?" Evelyn asked her son, she was miffed that it wasn't her that her son had asked last night. The cries of passion last night got to her a lot more than she expected it would.

Darmon looked angrily at his mom and before he could saying anything it was Agatha who stopped any conflict, "Evelyn, darling. Your son had a valid reason and now he's back, just be thankful for that. I don't want to see anymore arguments. Evelyn go kiss your son to show him you really do care."

Evelyn was indeed angry and upset over the last week and let her emotions cloud her judgment and saw that this could have gone wrong again. Evelyn quickly got up, moved over to her son and said, "I'm sorry, honey." Evelyn then leaned up to kiss her son tenderly, which then turned into a passionate kiss. Darmon laughed, "Apologize accepted. Mom, to make up for ignoring you would you like to join me this evening? Grandma, you're invited too."

He then looked over at his aunt, "Uhhh, sorry, auntie. I did say I would, maybe, fuck you later. Do you want to join also or we can postpone until tomorrow night?"

Lynette looked with pride at her nephew and knew he would always keep his promises, even if this one wasn't actual a promise, "I'll love to join you, honey, alongside my mother and sister."

Darmon looked over at his mother and grandmother to confirm if they were okay with this and both smiled and nodded.

"So, ummhh... why are you all in your birthday suits?" Sara asked.

Amber and Elizabeth laughed, "New rule, Darmon's harem when in the safety of our home are to disrobe and be available to our man whenever he wants."

This quickly prompted all the women including the maids to undress and throw their clothes onto the backs of chairs, couches or on the floor. This did cause a small issue and meant that a dressing gown had to be always near the front door in-case someone came to the door.

That night, Darmon and all the women were in a heightened state of arousal. Agatha, Evelyn and Lynette visited Darmon that evening.

Throughout the night, Darmon had made each of them cum 3 times each as he plowed them and deposited his seed into each of them twice.

After the same discussion he had with Amber and Elizabeth, Lynette not only got to live out her fantasy of having sex with Evelyn, she also had sex with her mother. Agatha had never dreamed of being with another woman until that day, ended up loving how her family were bonding and gave up her mouth and pussy to her daughters.

Evelyn wasn't too fussed about the girl-on-girl action, but loved it regardless, she was more interested in letting her son pump her full of his cum and even told her mother-in-law and sister-in-law that the cum inside her from her son, remains inside her. Agatha and Lynette were more than happy comply as they knew Evelyn was desperate to getting pregnant.

The next night, he did take Sara and Jade into his room and they would refuse, initially, to even get close to each other. They were happy to just watch from a distance as either of them made love to Darmon. It took awhile for Darmon to get them together. The kissing was tentative at best, at the start, but as Darmon rammed his cock into either of them the scream of passion and lust overtook the hesitancy. Soon, they did experience the joy's of girl-on-girl sex. At the end of their sex marathon, they both cried onto his chest as he held them tight together. Darmon imparted the same lesson as he had given the rest and they knew, now, never to go behind his back, ever again.

Over the next few days, even the maids got their turn with the young master, this was a repeat of their previous encounter without Lynette present. Darmon tried to relay the same message to them, but they already knew. They confirmed that they were

the young master's women and nothing will come in-between that. They also said that they were very grateful that the young master still allowed them to be intimate with each other, but acknowledged that it will only be with him present.

Life was good for Darmon and his harem, until it was time for Agatha's plan to get her daughter divorced and the plan to make Jacob suffer.

A month had passed, since Lynette had hired a PI to catalog her brother's behavior pattern, before her mother had asked her to call her friend to arrange a meeting at home. On the day of the meeting everyone was asked to wear clothing, the meeting was arranged for 3 days time.

During the wait, a few things happened. Evelyn had awoke up over the last few days rushing to the toilet to throw up. A day later Amber and Elizabeth did the same thing. Darmon was seriously concerned and thought he had been fucking them too hard and they got sick. Darmon would laugh later when he is told that is exactly what he did.

Agatha, Evelyn and Lynette knew the signs. Amber and Elizabeth were intelligent enough to figure out what was going on. Agatha went out to get pregnancy tests for each of them, enough, to check over the next couple of weeks.

Agatha when she saw the test results for each were positive, cried with joy alongside the pregnant women. It was Elizabeth that asked, "But how, mom?"

Evelyn chuckled, "Honey, do I need to have the talk about the birds and the bee's with you?"

"That's not what I meant, mom," Elizabeth said annoyed at her mother's joke.

"I know, sweetheart. In a group of women who all live together, their bodies sometimes sync their cycles together. You already know I was trying to conceive, and I suspect that my son knocked me up before the shit storm happened. As for you both, it is possible that when he decided to have you both first after that storm had passed. Darmon was probably backed up a lot that week and let it all out inside each of you."

"At this rate, it is only a matter of time before Darmon knocks us all up," Lynette said shaking her head and wondering how soon she will be throwing up into the toilet herself.

Evelyn, Amber and Elizabeth sat Darmon down, with all the family members present, and explained that they were pregnant and the babies growing in their bellies were his. Darmon was shocked at first then jump up and danced with joy. He grabbed each of them in turn and pranced around, laughing.

When it come to his mother, cousin and sister, he toned down his actions for fear of hurting the babies. Everyone was overjoyed at the news. Those that weren't pregnant, yet, had their heads huddled together to figure out who was next. Jade was convinced it would be her mother next.

A few days later, they were all dressed and waiting in the living room for Lynette's friend to arrive. There was a knock at the door and Alice went to answer the door and lead a striking elegantly dressed woman into the living room.

Lynette got up and went to her side, hugged her and then introduced her, "Everyone this is Debora. Debora, this is my family."

Agatha started the negotiations, "Debora, what we discuss here is confidential and must remain so, even if you decide not to go ahead with this. I won't make you sign an NDA and you can walk away at any time during these talks. Do you agree to this?"

Debora didn't know what to make of this and shrugged her shoulders, "Sure, I understand."

Agatha continued, "Good. Evelyn, my daughter-in-law, is looking to divorce my former son, Jacob. There is a pre-nup in place that favors Jacob unless he is caught cheating on their marriage."

Debora smiled, "So you're looking to lay a honey trap for this man?"

Before, Agatha could answer, Evelyn got up wanting to throw up again. Darmon rushed to his feet and went to her saying, "Mom, are you okay? Sara, take mom to the bathroom."

Sara got up quickly and helped her mother towards the bathroom. Debora raised an eyebrow.

"She's pregnant," Lynette answered the unspoken question.

"Oh, it's not her husband's, right? That could complicate the divorce," Debora asked.

"No, it's Darmon's," Lynette answered without thinking about what she should or shouldn't reveal, Debora was her friend since collage and they had an unspoken understanding, they had even been lovers throughout collage.

Agatha continued, "Yes, in a sense that is what we would like you to do. It should be noted that we have hired a PI and all your interactions with Jacob would be videoed. It is important that you are caught on camera having sex with him. Do you agree?"

"That's a lot to ask of me. I'm not a whore or a slut," Debora said.

Before, Agatha could respond, both Sara and Evelyn returned, Darmon got up and held his mother and sat her next to Elizabeth, "Mom, you're okay, right?"

Evelyn answered, "Yes, Darmon. I'm fine. Just a little tired is all."

Debora suddenly perked up, so that man is Darmon, Lynette just said that that woman was pregnant with Darmon's child and that man just called her, 'Mom. Fuck what have I walked into,' Debora thought.

Agatha continued not knowing what was about to happen, "I'm not asking you to be a whore or slut. I'm willing to pay a large sum to ensure this divorce happens."

Debora turned towards Lynette and then back to Agatha, "I'm not a prostitute to get paid to sleep with men. I will do this one one condition."

Agatha sighed and hoped this could have been easy, with just a large sum of money, "What is your condition?"

Debora smirked and looked at Darmon, "I will do this if every time I have to sleep with that man, then this young man must comfort me, sexually, to make me forget about that man."

To say that this cause an uproar and turmoil would be an understatement. All the women stood up quickly and all shouting different things:

Agatha: "YOU WHAT? YOU WILL NOT LAY A HAND ON MY GRANDSON."

Evelyn: "MY SON IS OFF LIMITS, BITCH."

Lynette: "NO NO NO... YOU'RE NOT GOING TO STEAL ANOTHER ONE FROM ME."

Amber: "YOU CUNT, I'LL RIP YOUR THROAT OUT IF YOU THINK I WILL LET MY HUSBAND DO THIS."

Elizabeth: "FUCK ME, WHY DO THEY ALL WANT WHAT IS MINE."

Sara: "NO NOT MY BROTHER, MY LOVER. MY LIFE."

Jade: "LET ME AT THIS CUNT. I DON'T CARE SHE'S DEAD."

Debora was stunned beyond believe that every single female in the family had feelings or was intimate with this young man, Darmon.

It was Darmon that put a stop to all this chaos, that had all the females quiet. Even though the maids had remained silent, Darmon had looked at them when Debora made her request and saw anger there, "I'll do it."

This statement stunned everyone and made them sit back down. Darmon continued, "I can see it in your eyes, why you made that request. I saw your eyes light up when aunt Lynette told you mom was pregnant with my child. From the reactions of the rest of the family, I can assume you've already put the pieces together and know they're all in a relationship with me."

Debora sat back smiling. Darmon continued, "I have two conditions of my own. Firstly, this is only ever a one off agreement and any time my father has to fuck you then I will do the same. I want you to use a condom when you have to be with my father, but I will take you raw. Secondly, if you want to continue this afterwards then you must seek approval from each and everyone here, and that includes the maids as they are a part of my harem also. If even just one say's no then after this event, we do not ever see each other again. Do you agree?"

Debora answered, "Yeah, I agree to those terms. Besides, what have you got that is so different from any other male I know, to make even my dear friend Lynette besotted with you. I'm going to enjoy finding out."

Amber was crying, "Babe, why?"

Darmon got up and went over to her, kissing her gently, "I'm doing this for mom and all of us. I don't, really, want to do this, but it is the price that Debora has asked for."

"Mom, you and my sister are going to have my babies. I want mom and us all free of dad. I hope you can forgive me and understand that I do this for all of us," Darmon said as he looked around the room.

Debora was stunned she had never meet a man who would selflessly sacrifice himself for his woman, and in this case women. Debora even consider, just taking the monetary value, but really wanted to see what kind of man, this man named Darmon is.

Darmon knew that he had to pay a lot of attention to his harem members over the next few days or weeks as they might feel neglected. Darmon wasn't going to let any of them feel that way and would give his all to please them.

The rest of the conversation was around Jacob's pattern, where he would venture to a seedy bar 3 times a week, always on the same days. For sexual relief he always went to a whore house, but only for a blowjob or handjob and never sex.

It was decided that Debora would see him at the seedy bar and seduce him, slowly. It was important that he grow attached to Debora and then willing to fuck her. Darmon wanted her to make it so his father couldn't live without her. Then after the divorce is final to dump and humiliate his father.

After agreed to includes Darmon's final request, she left and the plan was put into action. As Debora left to setup the honey trap, the rest of the group discussed the next part of Agatha's plan.

Agatha was looking at her grandson, "There is one thing that Jacob loves more than anything else and that's the company that your grandfather built, darling." Agatha had started to call her grandson, darling now as he wasn't just her grandson anymore but her man and as such on equal footing with herself.

"This is mainly a family owned company and Jacob being the major shareholder, now after he stole Martin's shares. Initially, Jacob owned twenty five percent, Martin twenty percent, I owned fifteen percent, Lynette ten percent and Evelyn also owned ten percent. Each of the children, bar yourself, darling, own two percent each. The remained was shares released to the public and consists on twelve percent."

"Even, if we pooled all our shares together, it would only total forty three percent verses Jacob's forty five percent. I'm willing to sign over my shares to you the rightful heir and am almost convinced that your mother, aunt, cousins and sisters will do the same. The problem is that if we want controlling ownership of the company, then we will need to buy eight percent of the public shares. If this isn't possible then we at least have to own more than Jacob does of the company."

"But that won't be necessary if the plan for Evelyn to divorce Jacob works, in other words, Jacob would be forced to give up 70 percent of his his and Evelyn's combined shares, to his ex-wife, which would amount to thirty eight point five percent. So, thirty three percent, that would be the value less Evelyn initial shares plus thirty eight point five percent would ensure that you will have absolute control, darling."

"Even if Jacob contests this and it would be a straight fifty fifty split that would still entitle Evelyn to twenty seven point five percent. This combined with our other shares of thirty three percent plus twenty seven point five would still mean you get controlling ownership of the company, darling."

"When you have controlling interest in the company, we can force a board meeting and have Jacob fired. There are a few other things I want to also achieve as part of his ruin, but we can discuss those later," Agatha concluded her plan for Darmon to take over the company that she built with her husband.

"Grandma, I don't know how to run a company," Darmon said not sure how he can achieve this task.

"Oh, darling. You don't have to. I used to run this business with your grandfather, until we gave Jacob and Martin the company to run. I will do that, whilst I train you, your mother and Lynette, to do this job," Agatha told her grandson, now husband.

It was pretty easy for Debora to actually seduce Jacob. It started off innocently enough with flirting that soon progressed to fondling.

Jacob wasn't missing his whore anymore, he had found her replacement. The woman was into him big time and Jacob chuckled to himself and patted himself on the back on how easy it really was. 'You still got it, you old dog,' he thought as he was on another date with Debora. From flirting it easily moved to fondling, but for whatever reason, the woman just refused to kiss him. Jacob just thought it might be one of those women only hangups. He reasoned that once he got his cock into her, then she'd kiss him in the act of passion.

Debora, hated the man. He only ever thought of himself and came to pity Darmon's mother. This vile man had tried so hard to kiss her, Debora would laugh, but always pull away. It was only the thought of getting time with the young man, Darmon, that kept her performing this act. It was one of those days, that Debora was forced to allow this man to push his hands into her panties and wank his pathetic cock.

Debora knew that she had to string Jacob along, but not too long otherwise he would loses interest and just thinks she is, just, another cock tease. She knew that Jacob was itching to get into her pussy and his patients wouldn't last much longer. Debora wondered how long the case against him will take and how often she would have to pay with her pussy.

The only saving grace was that she would get to find out why Darmon's family wanted him so much, and knowing that she would be intimate with this dashing young man.

Debora during their collage era, had seduced each one of Lynette's boyfriends, to prove to her friend that her boyfriends couldn't be trusted. Debora would sleep with them once and dump them.

It was just a game to Debora, until Lynette meet Martin. She tried real hard to steal Martin, but he refused to entertain her advances. Debora even formed a lesbian relationship with Lynette and engineered it so that Martin would catch them, with the hopes that he would join them and she could get him to fuck her. Nothing worked.

Debora had seen the looks that passed between Lynette and Darmon and knew this was a bond she couldn't break.

Debora gave up playing loose, after she graduated from collage, and tried many time to form a meaningful relationship with men and women. None of Debora's relationships lasted more than 6 months, so had decided to stay single, until Mr. Right came along. Debora knew that Jacob definitely wasn't Mr. Right, but maybe he could lead her to him. For some strange reason, Debora's mind would always wander towards Darmon.

Debora just wasn't in the mood for anything to happen today with Jacob and at the end of the date, to keep him wanting more, gave him a kiss on the cheek close to his lips, after he had walked her home.

Jacob was annoyed, the fucking cock teasing whore, didn't even invite him in for coffee. Jacob knew he was close to getting his hard thick cock into her. She had moaned, as she jerked him off this evening. Jacob could see it in her eyes that she was impressed with his tool.

'Fuck, I need to get laid. If only the fucking slut hadn't run off with my daughters,' Jacob thought. Jacob fantasized, that he had the whore bent over the couch, spanking her ass as he fucked his daughter, he would tell her that he found her son and would bring back parts of him if she said anything.

Jacob fantasized about fucking his daughters pussies and making them his, since he wouldn't touch the stinky sluts pussy after someone else had been there.

Jacob when he got home, hit the bottle and told himself that on the next date, he wouldn't take 'no,' for an answer and would pound the slut hard making her scream.

The next date happened 2 days later, and Debora knew she had to go through with this, or he would look elsewhere for his satisfaction. This date she was more touchy feely with Jacob, and flirted with him heavy even though it made her sick to the stomach.

She had arranged with the PI to have hidden camera's installed in her apartment, that saved the videos footage to a secure cloud server.

At the end of the date, Debora gave him a quick peck almost on the lips, and invited him in for tea or coffee. Jacob jumped at the chance to finally pound the slut's pussy or maybe he would take her asshole. Jacob had started to enjoy anal with his fucking whore of a wife.

As soon as they entered Debora's apartment, Jacob grabbed Debora and tried to kiss her, as he ripped her clothes off. Debora would laugh and avoid getting kissed, but inwardly was feeling sick.

"Wait Wait... Let's move to my bedroom and then you can pound my pussy with that massive cock of yours," Debora giggled. 'Massive!' she thought and laughed inwardly, this vile man had a pencil thin cock and only 5 inches hard. Debora doubted she would even feel him inside her. Giggling, Debora lead Jacob to her bedroom shedding her torn clothing on to the floor as she went.

Once, in the bedroom, Debora was left in just her panties, bra and heels. Debora helped Jacob undress, whilst always avoiding Jacob's attempts at kissing. Jacob pushed Debora so that she fell onto her bed on her back, before Jacob yanked her panties off and just drove in to lick and eat her pussy. 'No foreplay. No building of sexual tension,' Debora thought, what a selfish asshole.

Debora faked moans and screams of passion before faking an orgasm. She pushing his head away before reaching into her bedside draw and picked out a condom. She had already seen his cock before and had to pick the smallest condoms she could find. It was very embarrassing going up to pay for them with the smirks she was getting from the cashier.

"Really, a condom?" Jacob asked.

"Yes, I'm not on the pill and don't trust you will have the strength or will power to pull out before you cum. My pussy will be milking your cock hard," Debora said as she ripped open the packet and rolled the condom onto his cock.

Debora moved further up the bed and spread her legs, and positioned herself so that various cameras caught his complete profile as his cock entered her. Debora was thankful that he only lasted a couple of minutes and faked another orgasm to

make it look like they had cum together. Jacob rolled off Debora and removed the condom throwing it onto the floor.

"My god, that was well worth it. If you hadn't put out today I was going to dump your ass. I would love to do that again, but maybe in 30 minutes," Jacob panted.

"Babe, I would love nothing more to go again all night long, but I have an early meeting at work that I need to prepare for. I would love for you to stay the night but my roommate would be back soon. Hey, why don't we go on another date in a few days. I'll call you tomorrow to arrange it," Debora lied.

"Pity, I was hoping I would be nailing you to your bed all night long, but I understand the pressures of work," Jacob said as he got up to get dressed. Debora put on a dressing gown and walked Jacob to the door, kissing him on the cheek, "Goodnight, lover!" she whispered into his ear. Debora watched as he left her apartment, hail a cab and leave before she stripped her dressing gown off her, ran to the bathroom and vomited into the toilet. She turned on the shower, scrubbed her skin raw and cried.

The next day, Debora went back to her employer house and it was Helen that answered the door that day. Since, this was an unannounced visit, Debora was stunned that everyone was naked, except for the maid that escorted her, who was dressed in a light dressing gown.

"Mistress, we have a guest," Helen announced.

Agatha didn't even bat an eyelid when she saw the stunned look on Debora's face, "Debora, what can I do for you, sweetie?"

Debora surveyed the room and her eyes were drawn to Darmon and when she looked down, Debora gasped. Amber and Sara saw her look at Darmon and at his crotch, who moved to hide him and his cock from her view. Debora shook her head to clear it, "I did it last night, the evidence is uploaded to the secure cloud."

Agatha needed to confirm the evidence, "Helen, can you please fetch my laptop from my room?"

"Yes, mistress," Helen said before leaving to get the laptop. Helen returned 1 minute later and handed her mistress the laptop.

A few minutes later, Agatha had fired up the laptop, entered the address of the secure server and set the one of the videos to stream to the television.

The video selected was one where Debora was flirting with Jacob that lead to the masturbation event. When they saw Jacob's cock, Jade laughed and said, "Uncle's penis is tiny." Agatha gave her a stern look and Jade went quiet. Everyone could see that Debora was clearly not enjoying this and even looked sick. This video ended. Agatha clicked on one of the more recent videos.

This video captured the moment Jacob cheated on Evelyn, which resulted in Amber cheering, "Yes, uncle is screwed." Another stern look from Agatha made her go quiet also. The video continued with Jacob leaving and then Debora violently being sick in the toilet, how Debora sat on the shower floor, scrubbing her skin raw and crying.

Everyone was stunned at the pain and suffering Debora had to endure and looked over at her, they could see tears in her eyes. Agatha stood up and pulled Debora into her embrace, neither women cared that the older one was naked. "I'm sorry, sweetie, that you had to go through that. I know it pains you to do this, but as per my grandson's request, this isn't enough. You will need to go back to him and do this several more times."

Debora burst into tears, she really didn't want that vile man to touch her ever again. "I know, sweetie. I know. As the divorce is taking place, Jacob would need to think you care for him and he could rely on you."

Debora knew this had to happen, but it didn't make it any better, she felt that she was debasing herself and hated herself for agreeing to the deal. After Debora had calmed down, Agatha looked over at her grandson, "Darling, can you please take Debora to your room and show her what it means to be really loved by a man."

Darmon moved over to the women and took Debora's hand into his and lead her towards his room. Debora looked down at Darmon's crotch as he gently lead her and gasped again. Debora saw that Darmon looked over 5 inches flaccid and thick too. When they reached Darmon's bedroom, they entered and he left the door open, and he sat Debora on to the side of his bed.

Darmon, gently titled her head up to look directly into her eyes, "Debora, I'm sorry you had to go through that with my father, and we all witnessed the pain you felt having to go through that. I know we had a deal and I will always keep a promise and deal, but I don't want to cause you anymore pain or suffering. If you don't feel up to it now, then we can postpone this. You can bank them and use them all at once later if you want. This thing we have asked of you, isn't going to get any easier and if you feel that being with me each time to cleanse you, then it's a duty and burden I'm willing to take."

Debora now knew why Lynette and the other's fell for this young man. It wasn't arrogance that he knew he had a harem and could have a different women attend to him each night, but it was his empathy and knowing just what to say that helped calm even the most frightened of women.

Debora even chuckled to herself and marveled at how this young man could juggle the various different personalities in his harem. Debora knew in her heart without even getting to the sex, she had meet Mr. Right, and it pained her to know that she had to continue sleeping with his father for any chance at sharing his love.

Debora put her hand against his chest and felt Darmon's heartbeat, "You might think I'm crazy, but I thinking I'm falling for you... And it pains me to have to continue doing this when all I want is to be near you. I can now see how you've managed to capture the hearts of them all, including Lynette who said she would never love another except Martin. How do you do it?"

Darmon genuinely laughed and to Debora it was a laugh without any falseness or anything hidden behind it, "All of them seem to think I have this magic..."

Debora also laughed and Darmon knew that she was going to be alright.

"You know, I have an absolute rule, one that I decided on after high school and through into collage and beyond. I won't allow any of my dates to kiss me, I didn't even let Lynette kiss me when we had our fling in collage. It was the one rule I made to myself that 'that I would only do that with the one I felt I was destined to be with.' I'm not going to lie to you and say I've only ever dated a little, I've had many relationships with both men and women and in all cases they didn't last long. Please don't think I am a slut or whore, it's just that I've been looking for the one that will take my breath away and the one I want to devote myself fully to. To me it could have been a man or woman."

Darmon listen patiently understanding this was Debora's way of letting him know who she was, "It's nice to get to know you a little and see the woman behind the mask that you have to wear."

Debora was stunned that Darmon could see right through her, "I'm not a virgin, Darmon. I've had sex with nearly all of those I dated, hoping without success that intimacy would be the spark needed to find the perfect partner, and I can finally settle down in bliss. I'm feeling very conflicted right now, I made this deal with you and your family, just to see what made them all fall for you. I have a confession to make, Darmon, one that has me scared."

Darmon, just held Debora in his arm and let her continue, "Throughout collage, whenever Lynette would find a boyfriend, I would seduce them, fuck them and then dump them. Not because I wanted Lynette to suffer, but to prove to her that all men would fall, as a way to keep her for myself. This continued, until Lynette meet Martin. Try as I might I could never make him falter, I even engineered for him to catch Lynette and I in a lesbian encounter, hoping he would fall. He never did, he just told us that he would be back later and left."

"This is where I am conflicted, I feel something between us at least my heart does, but my mind is saying 'Girl, you're not going to steal this one from Lynette.' Darmon, would you kiss me? I need to prove something to myself and if I believe what I feel to be right, then would you allow me to talk to my friend, your aunt Lynette?"

Darmon was puzzled and confused since Debora had already said that 'no kissing,' was an absolute rule she had, but looking down at her blushing and shy now, "Okay, I don't mind." Darmon put a finger under Debora's chin and lifted her face up towards his. Darmon watched as his mouth descended towards hers and saw some panic, and he smiled to reassure her. Their lips meet and it wasn't just a quick peck, Darmon tenderly kissed Debora.

Debora's world exploded, she felt electricity shoot throughout her body and moaned as she was lost in the kiss. Debora's tongue snaked out of her mouth to part Darmon's lips. Soon the kiss turned passionate and Debora fainted.

When Debora awoke later, Darmon had left and Lynette, her friend, was sat on the bed besides her, stroking her forehead. Debora said groggily, "Lynette, what happened?"

Lynette chuckled, "My man's magic, I believe. Darmon has already let me know what happened and that you wanted to talk to me."

Debora got up and hugged her friend, "I'm sorry... Truly I'm sorry, for all those things I did to you in collage."

Lynette smiled, "All in the past, it also lead to me meeting Martin, so I can't really hold that against you. What intrigues me the most right now is your one rule of 'no kissing,' you didn't even let me kiss you in collage despite our intimate relationship. Why break that rule now?"

Debora got all shy and blushed, "I know I was a bitch to you in collage, and wanted to kiss you, but was afraid of what it could have meant since you were with Martin then. I still don't believe you were my soulmate back then or even now. As for breaking the rule, I wanted to prove something to myself and wanted to see what I was feeling was true. My mind was saying one thing and my heart something else."

Debora quickly got up off the bed and stood before Lynette, "Please understand, that I'm not trying to steal Darmon away from you..."

Lynette didn't let Debora finish what she was about to say as she laughed loudly, "Oh, Debora. Darmon is mine and I am his, there is nothing you could ever do that would make him leave me or should I say us, his family."

"That's just my point, I don't want to steal him from any of you. You've known since high school that I was always looking for my soulmate, the one that I could happily spend my whole life with. I've found him, Lynette, and that kiss proved it," Debora said with some glee.

"What? Really?" Lynette was stunned at this revelation.

Debora pulled Lynette up off the bed, whilst holding hands was dancing a small jig with a stunned Lynette.

Lynette stopped Debora's happy jig and sat her back on the bed, "This complicates things. What is it that you want?"

Debora now bashful looked at her friend, "I want to be Darmon's also. I'm looking for your permission to have sex with him to allow him to claim me."

Lynette sighed, "The deal you struck with my nephew means that you can get him to fuck you and there isn't anything any of us can do about it. If you're asking to be his woman then this task you're on complicates things. Just Know, if you're Darmon's then your his alone and that means he will not allow himself to be 'cucked'."

"Fuck him for now, but do not declare your undying love for him yet, let this task with his father end. Darmon will not allow you to fuck his father if he claims you as his before the task has ended. Although, if what you say is true then this task just got a lot harder for you. You will know in your heart that you're Darmon's, but still have to play the perfect girlfriend to his father."

Debora started to cry, now fully understand the consequences of this task.

Lynette soothed her friend, "Hey, look on the bright side, Jacob is so tiny you probably won't even feel him inside you and from the video his stamina is very lacking. Trust me when Darmon takes you, you will feel every millimeter and let his tenderness wash away the bad feelings you have. It'd going to be hard, especially, after your first time with my man. Once, this task is over you'll have my backing. Just remember, Darmon isn't yours alone, he's our man and we are his women."

Lynette paused then giggling looked Debora in the eyes, "Oh, Darmon fucks us all raw and has already gotten his mother, my eldest daughter and his eldest sister pregnant. He's going to fuck a baby into each of his harem members with the exception of my mother, who doesn't think she can conceive anymore, but my nephew is certainly going to try. What it means is that if you join the harem then you will be having his child and even if you don't he will still cum inside you as part of the

deal. So unless you're on birth control, then you'll just have to take your chance at not getting knocked up."

Debora wasn't on birth control and getting knocked up both scared and excited her at the same time.

"I'm going to leave now and send Darmon back in. Fuck him or ask nicely for him to make love to you. I suggest asking him to make love first and then you'll know what you've been missing all your life. After that fuck his brains out. My man, can easily go 7 rounds on any given night," Lynette laughed, as she left her nephew's bedroom.

Debora was stunned, 7 times in one night?

A short time later, Darmon returned to his bedroom, smiled at Debora, "You okay? You fainting caught me by surprise, I nearly panicked that I'd killed you somehow," Darmon chuckled.

Darmon had purposely left his bedroom door open. "So you ready for me to fulfill my end of the deal?"

Debora nodded and was soon again in Darmon's embrace kissing his hard. As they made out Darmon removed all her clothes and gently lay her on her back on his bed.

What followed was the whole night spent with Debora having orgasm after orgasm. Debora experienced all his foreplay techniques, where Darmon ate her to multiple orgasms. Debora even had a strong orgasm as his cock entered her vagina with only a few inches inside her. Both of them made love and fucked, the screams of passion from Debora were heard by everyone in the house and many come to witness the two mating. After they broke off from further fucking, Debora and Darmon lay side by side catching their breath. Debora on reflection chuckled at Lynette words, easily 7 time.

Debora spent the night cuddled with Darmon and fucked again in the morning and in the shower. When she came to breakfast she was also naked and shyly greeted everyone.

It was Agatha who had to ask, "Sweetie, are you sure you're okay to continue this?" Agatha already saw the signs and knew this task was going to get a lot harder for this women.

Debora looked at Agatha, Evelyn, then Lynette before settling on Darmon. "Yes," she replied, and silently to herself, 'I would do anything for this family.'

A few things happened over the next month, divorce papers were served to Jacob with infidelity as the cause. Jacob took the news a little hard, and would be a lot rougher when he managed to get his girlfriend to fuck him. Every time this happened it killed Debora inside and she always found comfort in her soulmate's arms. Debora always made Jacob wear a condom and was always thankful he was quick to cum, a one pump chump. All attempts by Jacob to allow him raw sex were denied and even made her angry on some occasions. With Darmon, Debora always allowed him raw entry and would always take his seed into her.

Another part of Agatha's plan was to get an DNA test done to prove Darmon was Jacob's, the problem was that they needed some hair from Jacob to get the DNA sequence for both parents against Darmon's. For this Elizabeth volunteered to get that sample.

Elizabeth still had access to the house she once shared with her father and picked a day when she knew her father would be at work.

Elizabeth had checked to make sure her father's car wasn't in the drive or garage, before she went over to the house. The first thing she noticed was the house once pristine was now a mess. Elizabeth wanted to get the hair sample quickly and leave. Elizabeth had just managed to snag the hair sample, when she heard the keys in the front door. Elizabeth panicked and quickly went into the bathroom in the hallway. Elizabeth flushed the toilet and left the bathroom to see her father shocked to see her when he saw his daughter.

"Honey, where have you been? Are you okay?" Jacob was excited to see his daughter, and his mind delighted in her coming back home since he was so going to fuck her brains out tonight.

"Dad, you're home early. Yeah, I'm fine. Mom took us all to an out of town motel, where we've been hiding. Well, not so much hiding, but mom making sure neither Sara or I could leave. Just glad I managed to escape. I missed you, dad," Elizabeth lied.

"No worries, tell me all about it later, Let's celebrate. You're nearly 21, so you're fine to drink." Jacob was happy.

Elizabeth knew she was pregnant with her brother child and drinking could harm the baby, "Nah, Dad. I don't want to break the law, so you drink and I will just have a soda. By the way, dad, this place is like a pig sty. Let me clean up."

Jacob sat on the sofa as Elizabeth went around cleaning up, "Honey, you know you've always been my favorite, right?"

"Of course, daddy. I knew all along," Elizabeth said with a mock smile at her father.

"You know, I've always wanted what's best for you. Won't you let your daddy cuddle up with his daughter?" Jacob was itching to get into Elizabeth tight pussy and made a poor attempt at hiding his growing cock.

"Maybe, later, daddy. I need to make sure the house is clean," Elizabeth said brushing her father off.

Jacob steadily got drunker and looked at his daughter more and more, "Come Elizabeth, I've waited long enough to cuddle with my daughter." Jacob grabbed her as she passed him to sit on his lap. Elizabeth was scared.

Jacob ran his hand over Elizabeth's back, feeling no sign of a bra and delighting in this fact, "So tell me, honey, you still a virgin?"

"Dad!" Elizabeth said shocked.

"What? It's a valid question. I need to know if I have to fight a barrage of horny boys wanting to date my beautiful daughter," Jacob really wanted to know if his cock was going to deflower his baby girl.

"Dad, I have a boyfriend and we've done things," Elizabeth tried to deflect.

"Ah, so not a virgin then, pity," Jacob said as he put his hand on her thigh rubbing up and down getting closer and closer to her pussy.

"DAD, I told you I have a boyfriend, What are you doing?"

"Ahh, just trying to make my baby girl happy," Jacob said as he went to grab Elizabeth's breasts. Elizabeth stopped him and pushed him away before running to her former bedroom. Elizabeth locked the door, clearly scared.

Jacob got up on unsteady legs and went over to his daughter room and tried to open the door, only to find it locked. "Come on darling, daddy just wants to make his baby girl happy."

When Elizabeth wouldn't open the door even after multiple loud knocks on the door, "Open the door, baby. Let daddy in. I promise you once you've felt me inside you, you'll dump that boyfriend of yours."

Elizabeth started to cry and called her grandmother. After a few rings, Agatha, picked up the call and the first thing she heard was her granddaughter crying. "Sweetie, what wrong?"

"It's *SOB* Dad, he *SOB* came back early. *SOB* *SOB* He wants to fucking *SOB* rape me." Elizabeth sobbed into the phone, Agatha pressed a button on her phone to record this conversation and the background noise.

"OPEN THIS FUCKING DOOR NOW, SLUT. I'M GOING TO FUCK YOU, AND SARA WHEN I GET HER BACK. YOU'RE GOING TO TASTE AND LOVE MY COCK. YOU'RE GOING TO BE DADDY'S BITCHES." Agatha heard over the phone.

"THAT WHORE THAT IS YOUR MOTHER IS DIVORCING ME AND I WILL MAKE SURE BOTH YOU AND SARA WILL LIVE WITH ME. I'M GOING TO BREED YOU SLUTS. OPEN THIS FUCKING DOOR RIGHT NOW."

Back at the house, Darmon who heard this was angry and wanted to leave now to get his sister back and murder this asshole. It was Agatha's gentle hand on his arm that stopped him.

"Sweetie, I take it you're in a secure place. Can he get to you?" Agatha asked into the telephone.

"Yes, I mean *SOB* no. Dad, can't get in *SOB* I'm locked inside my bedroom."
Elizabeth replied still crying and in shock.

"Good, good. I'm on my way with your brother. We will be in the car opposite the house. When Jacob falls asleep, escape and get to the car. I know you're scared, sweetheart. Just think that you would be in your brother's arms soon. Let's keep this line open and Darmon will come rescue you if something bad happens, that I can promise you."

Elizabeth kept the line open and over the next two hours, Jacob would come to bang against her bedroom door and shout for her to open up.

Later during the evening Jacob made one final attempt, "Baby girl, Daddy's sorry. If you open the door and let daddy fuck you just once I will get you anything you want. Just once and I won't ever fuck you again." Jacob was lying and once she yielded he knew he would be balls deep inside her every night. Elizabeth didn't open the door and Jacob kept drinking until he eventually passed out.

It was probably 4 hours since the start of her father's attempt at raping her, that she eventually managed to escape. Once she was safely in the car, she fell into her brother's embrace and cried all the way home.

When they got home, all the other harem members were very worried and couldn't sleep with what was going on. They all went to comfort Elizabeth.

It was Agatha again who took control of the situation, "Darling, take your wife to your bedroom, keep her company, comfort her and only have sex with her if she asks. She needs the strong arms of her husband around her tonight." The reference to husband and wife wasn't lost on everyone. It was exactly what Elizabeth needed right now.

Darmon and Elizabeth, didn't have sex that night, but they did sleep naked together. Darmon just supplied his strength to make his sister feel safe again.

Agatha had been deep in thought during the night and she wanted to punish Jacob even more and came up with a plan.

Darmon and Elizabeth came into the dinning room, with his arm over her shoulder keep her close to him. Elizabeth wouldn't leave her brother's side during breakfast and until late afternoon.

During breakfast, Agatha once again took charge, "Darling, for what Jacob tried to do yesterday, I want to punish him even more. For this you need to get Sara pregnant. I suspect that Jade wouldn't like that without her also getting pregnant. So your only job other than making sure Elizabeth is fine, is making love to Sara and Jade to get them pregnant, especially, Sara."

"I know both Sara and Jade aren't probably ready for this, but this is to make your father pay for what he tried to do or wanted to do to both Sara and Elizabeth. I'm not going to force either of you, though," Agatha said trying to give a justification.

"Grandma, we heard that he was going to rape my sister and even wanted to rape me. I have no father, not anymore. If Elizabeth is my brother's wife then so am I. It is a wife's duty to ensure her husband's strong genes are passed down, right Jade?" Sara replied to her grandmother's request. Sara was actually very happy as it meant that her brother was going to be inside her a lot more.

Back at their old house, Jacob awoke with a splitting headache the quickly went to check on his slut of a daughter, hoping she hadn't gone. His hopes were dashed when he found her bedroom empty.

A couple of weeks passed with the lawyers fighting the divorce. Jacob was on the losing end as evidence was mounting against him. This in turn made him even more unfocused and he took it out on Debora, it got to the point that Jacob was starting to abuse her. Darmon put his foot down and told everyone that he didn't want Debora to be further involved with his father. Darmon could see how this was taking a toll on Debora's life as could everyone else. Darmon decided that any further contact would be via text only and no meetings or dates were permitted.

Darmon also insisted that since Jacob knew where Debora lived, then for the moment, she should move in here with us. Debora was so happy and knew this task was coming to an end, she just prayed that she could convince the rest to be invited to the harem. It was strange really, their initial meeting and her request were now small compared to the bonds she was now forming with the others.

Then one day, Sara awoke after a bout of heavy threesome sex with her brother and Jade, rushing to the bathroom throwing up into the toilet. Jade noticed what was happen and went to fetch aunt Evelyn. Evelyn suspected what was happening, but needed to wait a week to test. A couple of days later, Jade awoke and rushed to the bathroom also, vomiting into the toilet. Sara this time went to fetch aunt Lynette.

It was proved positive by the pregnancy tests a week later. With all the unprotected sex they were having, it soon became apparent that Helen and Alice had also conceived. Since, Debora had now moved in and even though the deal was no longer in effect, Darmon and Debora could still be seen and heard having unprotected sex and as with all things in nature, Debora missed her period. She was scared at to tell anymore, but Agatha picked up on subtle changes and had a private meeting with her.

"Debora, sweetie. What seems to be the problem?" Agatha asked with concern in her voice.

Debora was scared and fear was showing on her face, Agatha gently put her hand over Debora's, "Sweetie, you don't need to be scared of anything. Speak your mind, child."

"I'm over a week late," Debora said in a very quiet voice.

"Why would you be scared of news like that, sweetie? Darmon and the others will be pleased at the news," Agatha soothed Debora.

"I'm not a member of the harem and I could well be pregnant with your grandson's child." Debora wept.

"Oh, you silly goose. You wouldn't be here if Darmon and the other's hadn't already accepted you. You're family now, sweetie. I thought you would have realized that by now. Darmon defended you and made sure you never needed to be with Jacob every again. Don't you think his harem member's didn't notice that. Now, you could well be pregnant with his child, what more proof do you need?"

Debora burst into tears at the relief that suddenly came with acceptance.

When it was revealed that Debora was late there were cheers and clapping from everyone. Lynette, of course, was getting depressed and insisted that Darmon spend as much time with her as possible. Whenever Lynette was with Darmon, she insisted that his cum was always deposited in her vagina. Lynette has was dancing and singing when she missed her period and she wouldn't stop smiling. Lynette's pregnancy was also confirmed by the pregnancy test.

Agatha at this point made mass appointments with their family doctor to make sure test were done to confirm and ensure mothers-to-be and babies were fine. The doctor and her staff were very surprised that so many of the same family were pregnant at the same time, but didn't make a big fuss about it, although she did note that it was strange that the same young man attended the appointments with each

mothers-to-be and even held their hands with the women looking at him with love. The doctor, of course, didn't comment on this either but did suspect that the father was the same for all of them.

Agatha has also requested a DNA paternity test, with samples of hair from Jacob, Evelyn and Darmon. The results were back with hundred percent proof that Jacob was Darmon's father.

The divorce concluded in favor of Evelyn and all their assets were split. Their old house had to be sold and Agatha asked Darmon if he wanted to buy it, but he decided it brought with it many bad memories.

Agatha still had some pull with the board of directors at the company and arranged a meeting without Jacob to introduce the new owner, Mr. Darmon Preston. Agatha and everyone had signed over their share to Darmon, their husband. It was concluded that the current managing director, Mr. Jacob Preston, was to be fired and Mrs. Agatha Preston would now take on that role.

Jacob was frustrated, Debora his girlfriend was ghosting him. In fact, he got a text this morning from her, that informed him she was dumping him. He was seriously pissed, he had lost the chance to fuck Elizabeth and realized his approach had been wrong, he should have seduced her slowly, but he was horny and let his little head do the thinking.

His girlfriend, who he thought loved him and would stick with him through thick and thin, dumped him. Yes, maybe he should have treated her better, but the stress from everything was getting to be too much and he did what he normally did to relieve that stress, he got a little rough with her. Jacob really thought she was enjoying getting roughed up a little, it certainly was enjoyable for him.

When he got to the office, he was told to go to the board of directors meeting room. Jacob sighed and wondered what other shit this company was going to throw at him now. When he got to the meeting room, Jacob sat in his usual place, unaware of the storm that was about to hit him.

The board meeting door opened and in walked Darmon. Jacob looked up and laughed, "So the bastard wasn't dead in a ditch, pity or maybe, it's my good fortune that you've returned. You missed the beatings, BOY. You missed the pleasure you got from the pain? No! Because I certainly missed the pleasure of giving you pain," Jacob laughed even louder.

"What do you want, BOY? Get lost, I don't care enough about you anymore?" Jacob chuckled.

Darmon handed over an envelope at arms reach to prevent Jacob trying to attack him.

"What's this? Can't speak? It doesn't matter, I don't want to hear your voice anyway."

"Just open the envelope and read what is written there," Darmon said in a calm voice.

Jacob opened the envelope and read the DNA report. He read 'It should be noted that a one Darmon Preston is the biological child with hundred percent accuracy of one Jacob Preston and one Evelyn Preston.'

Jacob was shocked and bravado won against an apology, "So fucking what I should believe a made up report? You weren't my son then and you certainly aren't my son now."

Darmon sighed, he sent a quick message via his phone telling the next person to enter in 5 minutes.

"Dad, when you had the vasectomy, didn't they tell you not to have unprotected sex for 2 weeks and then only after confirming that you no longer have any semen in your sperm? I bet, just as soon as you had the vasectomy you jumped on mom and conceived me. You thought mom had cheated on you on account of my hair color? Well, have you ever heard of regressed genes? It's possible that one my ancestors was a redhead. Did you ever try to get a DNA test done to prove it one way or another? No, all you saw was someone that didn't fit with what you expected. You tortured your own family without getting any actual proof."

Jacob, now with hindsight, did see that he should have proved it one way or another, but his arrogance got the best of him. Just then the door opened and another person entered.

Debora walked in and stood besides Darmon. "Dad, I would like you to meet my woman. She is going to have your grandchild."

Jacob laughed so loud that his sides started to hurt, "Your woman? Do you know that I've been fucking your woman, BOY. I've been cucking you, BOY! You should have heard her screams of passion as I nailed your woman."

Debora was seriously angry, "He..."

Darmon stopped her with a gentle hand on her arm, "Well, let's review that shall we? Debora ensured that mom got what she deserved as per the pre-nup you both signed. This woman who sacrificed so much for me to achieve my goals. This woman who would always make you wear a condom and when you did have sex with her, she could hardly feel anything. This woman who never allowed you to kiss her."

Darmon, put his hand on the back of Debora's head and brought her down to kiss him tenderly then with passion as they French kissed. "And this same woman, even though you begged her to take you raw is now carrying my child. She's mine now dad and she knows it. It's you who was 'cucked', dad."

Darmon looked up at Debora with love, "You can leave now, babe. Can you please ask the next 3 to come in now. I'll reward you soon. Love you!"

Debora started to move towards the door, but looked back over her shoulder and said, "Love you too, darling."

A few moments later, the door opened again and in walked Evelyn, Elizabeth and Sara. Jacob laughed again, "What is this? An episode of 'This is your life' TV show? Why drag the cunt and her daughters in here. I see, the whore ran to her son."

It was Sara that went up to her dad and slapped him hard across the face, before Darmon could stop her. Darmon did manage to grab her and pull her back before Jacob could retaliate.

Jacob laughed, "Well, at least one of you has some backbone. It's just a pity, I was too late to break the sluts in."

"I see so, you now admit that you no longer have a family and all you see them as is your playthings? Oh, this is perfect because they don't consider you family either. Show him the presents you brought," Darmon continued in a calm voice.

First Evelyn, remember what she said she would do, threw the test at Jacob, it hit him on the right cheek, bounced off his chest then landed on the table. Jacob scanned the test and saw it was positive. Jacob smirked, "See I knew all along you were just a fucking whore."

"Jacob, it has already been proven that Darmon is yours and I never once cheated on you during our marriage. Your insecurities are what ruined our marriage and family," Evelyn responded to Jacobs accusation. Jacob just snorted.

"Don't you want to know who the father is, Dad?" Darmon asked.

"What makes you think I want to know who my ex-wife has been screwing," Jacob spat out.

"Fair enough, but we'll circle back to that shortly. Elizabeth, you're next," Darmon said.

Elizabeth didn't want to get too close to Jacob and put the test on the table, sliding it towards Jacob. Jacob looked at the results and it was also positive.

Jacob snorted again, "What the fuck is this? Daughter like mother it seems. Elizabeth who I doted on is just as much of a slut and whore as her mother is."

"You tried to rape me, Jacob. That just goes to show me how much I really meant to you. I told you I had a boyfriend," Elizabeth said.

Jacob just smirked, "Yeah, you did and I told you that I would make you forget him after you had a taste of my cock."

It was Elizabeth who laughed this time, "I doubt that very much, Jacob. Do you want to know who my boyfriend is?"

"If I didn't want to know who your whore of a mother is fucking, why do you think I want to know who you are being a slut for?" Jacob spat out getting annoyed now.

"Again fair enough. We'll circle back to that also shortly," Darmon said

Jacob smirked again and looked over to Sara, "You're next, I suppose and you're also going to show a positive pregnancy test, right?"

Sara just place the test on the table and slid it over to Jacob.

"Oh what a big surprise. You're just as much a slut and whore as your mother and sister are," Jacob chuckled.

"Do you want to know who the father is, DAD?" Sara asked with a sharp edge to her voice.

Jacob laughed, "Well it all seems that you want to tell me so much, go on then. Which losers did you spread your legs for?"

All three of them said simultaneously, "Darmon!"

This caused Jacob to choke as he was laughing and was then coughing to recover.

"Jacob, Isn't it wonderful that your son had claimed what you could only dream of." To prove her point, Evelyn kissed her son with such passion it left her panting and out of breath. Elizabeth took over from her mother when she moved away and this kiss was just as passionate as her mother's kiss. Sara also kissed her brother, passionately with a lot of tongue and as they broke away there was a strand of saliva connecting them together.

Darmon laughed, "I told you we'll circle back to that. They're mine now dad, just as Debora is mine. Thanks girls, after we finish here and when we get home, I expect all 3 of you in my bed as I fuck your brains out. You can leave now, please send the next ones in. Also just in-case I haven't told each of you today. I love you and you and you!"

Evelyn and the girls, giggled, "We all love you too, darling," Evelyn returned.

"You jealous yet, dad?" Darmon mocked Jacob.

A few moments later, Agatha entered with Lynette.

Jacob was shocked, "Mom, Sis?"

"No, you don't get to say that to me, Jacob," Agatha stated. "I don't have a son anymore. You burnt that bridge years ago, especially after your treatment of my grandson."

"What mom, just said. I don't have a brother either, especially with what I suspect you did to Martin," Lynette coldly told Jacob.

"Grandma, please show him that document," Darmon asked Agatha.

"Of course, darling," Agatha responded, before pushing a document over to Jacob. Jacob picked it up, read it, then the color drained from his face.

"Ahh, yes. I can see your mind thinking how did we get this? Feel free to destroy that as it's only a copy. The original is being reviewed right now," Lynette said with some glee in her voice.

"By the way, Jacob, you're fired," Agatha said with some joy in her voice.

"What, you don't have a say in this. I own the majority of this company and the board listens to me," Jacob said stunned, then recovering, laughed, "That's not even a funny joke. You don't have the authority to fire me."

"Really, the new majority owner of the company really doesn't like you and appointed me as Managing Director and as per their request I was to fire you," Agatha told Jacob in a very serious voice.

"What new owner? Who the fuck is this new owner?" Jacob choked out.

"Are you really that dense, Jacob? You've been sat opposite him all this time. Told you the new owner hates you," Lynette openly laughed.

Jacob was stuck dumb for the first time in his whole life. Jacob had always prided himself on being top dog, not someone that will take shit from anyone and was content knowing his voice alone commanded, or more like demanded, respect.

"Darmon, is the majority share owner of this company, that my husband built. All of the family willing signed their shares to Darmon. I'm just glad that the company will remain in the family, since Darmon is the heir. You lost that right years ago. The day you denied me, my grandson and my granddaughters. You didn't expect this when you did that did you?" Agatha said.

"You know, we gave you many chances to fix your mess. Every action we took to get Darmon away from you was stopped by you and when mom and I begged Martin to find a solution, he did because he loved his family. You should have seen the joy mom and I felt knowing you had agreed to the deal and Darmon was about to become my son. Can you imagine how surprised we were when we tried to get you to honor the deal and you produced a different signed document. You broke mom's heart that day. Mine was doubly broken, I had lost my husband and son," Lynette related Jacob's failings.

"In a way, it was Darmon who found us when he ran away, it caused mom and I to search for him and bring him home. I doubt very much that Darmon would be alive now had he not done that. I suppose that is a blessing in a way," Lynette said with some amusement in her voice.

"Jacob, when we leave this meeting room. You're going to be arrested for fraud, rape and attempted rape," Agatha told Jacob.

Jacob snorted, "Rape and attempted rape?"

"Yes, Jacob. Your ex-wife is claiming you repeatedly raped her anally, always without her consent. As for the attempted rape..." Agatha pressed a button on her phone.

Jacob was shocked to hear:

'It's *SOB* Dad, he *SOB* came back early. *SOB* *SOB* He wants to fucking *SOB* rape me.'

'OPEN THIS FUCKING DOOR NOW, SLUT. I'M GOING TO FUCK YOU, AND SARA WHEN I GET HER BACK. YOU'RE GOING TO TASTE AND LOVE MY COCK. YOU'RE GOING TO BE DADDY'S BITCHES.'

'THAT WHORE THAT IS YOUR MOTHER IS DIVORCING ME AND I WILL MAKE SURE BOTH YOU AND SARA WILL LIVE WITH ME. I'M GOING TO BREED YOU SLUTS. OPEN THIS FUCKING DOOR RIGHT NOW.'

'Sweetie, I take it you're in a secure place. Can he get to you?'

'Yes, I mean *SOB* no. Dad, can't get in *SOB* I'm locked inside my bedroom.'

'Good, good. I'm on my way with your brother. We will be in the car opposite the house. When Jacob falls asleep, escape and get to the car. I know you're scared, sweetheart. Just think that you would be in your brother's arms soon. Let's keep this line open and Darmon will come rescue you if something bad happens, that I can promise you'

There were further pauses in-between further banging on the door with Jacob ordering the door be opened and telling his daughter to accept his cock, before he heard:

'Baby girl, Daddy's sorry. If you open the door and let daddy fuck you just once I will get you anything you want. Just once and I won't ever fuck you again.'

"Dad, I think that would be attempted rape for Elizabeth and conspiring to rape Sara," Darmon said coldly.

"Oh by the way, so that you can completely reflect on the consequences of your actions. You should know, I'm my grandson, woman. Lynette is his woman and her daughters Amber and Jade are his women. To think if you were as loving as my grandson, you might have been in his place. To think you could have been a 'motherfucker' just as Darmon is, only the word wouldn't be said as an insult." The last bit was a complete lie, but Agatha was in a very vindictive mood.

Lynette actually laughed when her mother said this and knew that would never have happened. "Also, I'm pregnant with his child, as is Amber and Jade. Heck, he even put babies into our maids. Do you now see the consequences of your actions? Your son has a harem of women that love him and he loves them. Something you could only dream of. Had you treated your son right or allowed him to be adopted by me, then all he would have is a supportive family. You would have had your own happy family, Evelyn had eyes only for you, you dumb ass, and now she belongs to your own flesh and blood, son."

Darmon, Agatha and Lynette left the meeting room, and as they left the police entered and lead an cuffed Jacob away.

At the request of my grandmother, I have documented my journey to the man I am now. Grandma, said it would be good for our future generations to how our way of life began.

At the start of this tale, I was describing the encounter I had with my mother and sisters, that did happen. When we got home after dad was fired then arrested. We got naked as we enter the house. I dragged my mother and sister with me to the bedroom. I made love to and fucked each of them multiple times as this was the start of our new family.

Over the coming days, weeks and months, as my father's trial was underway, I and some of my harem would sit in on it. When it came to the actual final sentencing, all of my harem were in the stands. Nearly all of my women were showing signs of pregnancy and were glowing.

Evelyn, my mother, now consider me her husband. We didn't need a piece of paper to inform us of our bond. The joining of our bodies and hearts was all that was needed to confirm this. It was actually, grandma, that initially encouraged us to be husband and wife, and then encouraged every other member of the harem to do the same. So, I'm the husband to many different wives. It's not easy to balance so many women and never to show any favoritism, but I don't find that a chore either as I do love each and everyone of them equally.

The man that once tortured me and my family, is all but forgotten. This man, who is my father, is no longer family and only remembered in this tale I write.

I have complete faith in my harem and they in turn me. They know that I belong to them and they to me and we will never betray each other.

Oh, I better finish up here as grandma, now my wife, is calling me to join her with her daughter, Lynette, my aunt and now my wife also, for some much needed bonding. I don't know how my life could get any better, except maybe giving the love I was denied to my children and getting that love returned.

Epilogue:

Jacob got 10 years in prison as a result of his actions. The charge for murder of Martin couldn't be proved and as such the case of a Mr. Martin Masters was never solved, but was left as an open case. Jacob sentence would have been more lenient, but the prosecution wanted to draw attention to the physical and mental abuse suffered by a Mr. Darmon Preston.

Within the first month in prison, Jacob was assaulted by a gang of black men. They had heard he was going to rape his daughters and they didn't like that. They believed that a man could bed his sister, if there was a spark there, but daughters were to be cherished and wives respected. Jacob had was knocked down to the ground and lost consciousness for a brief moment and next he had felt a searing pain in his rectum. Jacob was about to get into his first gang bang.

No one from the family ever went to visit him, initially, so didn't know what was happening to him.

Darmon and his harem were happy, and as tummies grew, he would gently caress them and whisper with his head close, "Mommy and Daddy, love you." All of Darmon's harem could see how he would interact with them all and none of them ever felt any jealousy. After a very intense session with Agatha and Lynette, where

Darmon didn't mind that they loved each other, as he took both. He was a little more gentle with Lynette who was starting to show and would make sweet love to her, but pounded his grandma hard. In the morning, Agatha quickly leaping off the bed, waking her grandson and daughter, and rushed to the bathroom. Lynette was also worried and quickly rushed over to make sure her mother was okay.

Lynette who knew all the signs, rubbed her mom's back and yelled, "FUCK YES. YOUR GRANDSON, MY NEPHEW HAS GONE AND DONE A MISSION IMPOSSIBLE AND KNOCKED YOU UP, MOM." This shout brought the harem all rushing to the bathroom and before Agatha could respond put her head back into the bowl and vomited again. Once, Agatha had stopped, she sat back and asked "How, I'm too old for this?"

Evelyn laughed, "Mom, did you tell Darmon's swimmers that you were too old?" This brought a fresh round of laughter. Agatha was still having periods, admittedly irregularly and she felt it was her body telling her, 'your baby making days are over.' It seems that her grandson wasn't sent the memo and he managed to knock up his grandma.

After the birth of his child with his mother, Darmon, did go with them to visit his father in prison. Jacob was pissed and looked like he wasn't getting any sleep at all, which was true, he had been forced, initially, to suck and be buggered each night by 10 or more people. Now, each evening, he would get down and just get to it, in fact he started to enjoy it. No one had ever wanted to get fucked by him or even wanted to suck his pencil thin tiny cock.

"Dad, I'll like to introduce you to your granddaughter, Emily Preston. Isn't she gorgeous. Wow, you don't look so good, prison life certainly doesn't suit you. Just to think you could have been out here enjoying life... I certainly am. I going to put another baby into mom as soon as she is ready. Isn't that right, darling." Darmon taunted Jacob.

"FUCK YOU AND YOUR WHORE!" Jacob shouted.

"Now, now, Jacob. My husband is right. You should have believed me when I always told you, Darmon was your child. You had the perfect life, a devoted wife and daughters who loved you. A son, who only wanted to be loved, but you threw that all away because you thought you had been 'cuckolded'. Let me tell you a secret, Jacob. Your son, fucked my brains out, and impregnated me well before our divorce. I cheated on you, but only you got caught cheating on me. Debora didn't cheat on Darmon, she joined his harem after she was done with you," Evelyn now laughed.

"In fact every time she had to fuck you she came running to Darmon to get fucked by a real man, she was cheating on you and she won't ever cheat on your son. In fact none of his harem would cheat on him, his love and our love for him ensures it."

Jacob in a rage, stood up and started to bang against the glass. He was subdued and taken back to his cell. Jacob would have got out well before the 10 year sentence, but the warden found out he has tried to get one of the guards to let him suck their cock and was denied parole.

10 Years later, Jacob is out of prison and managed to secure an interview with a well know company. Jacob was sat in the waiting room, preparing himself for the interview and was watching kids running around, he was muttering under his breath, "What the fuck is this a nursery." Jacob was thinking he might have made a mistake, a top business should be serious and shouldn't have kids running around.

Jacob was losing focus with all the giggles and laughter of the kids, and was thankful that he was called after waiting 15 minutes. Jacob was lead to a room with 3 females sat opposite him and he could see 4 children playing behind them.

The woman on the left smiled, "Welcome Mr Preston. Please don't mind the children. The owner loves strong family bonds and encourages all employees to bring their children in, once a month. It's actually refreshing and everyone thinks productivity would go down, but surprising it's the opposite as the owner wants everyone to be considered family, which motivates the workforce for the family unity."

The woman in the middle smiled, "Mr. Preston, we are sorry to inform you that your interview will not proceed and you will not find employment with this company."

Jacob was stunned as he knew he would have sailed through any questions they would have asked, "May I ask why?"

The woman on the right smiled, "I'm not sure why, but we were advised to tell you 'the owner really hates you'."

The End.